

# TalonEmpire - NGE: Sincerely Yours

## TalonEmpire

在两个宇宙中，真嗣和明日香分别是各自世界第三次冲击的触发者。莉莉丝实现了他们的愿望：回到过去。他们拒绝了各自世界的人类补完计划，穿越回同一个宇宙。两人都希望在新宇宙中改变现状，重建他们的爱情。然而，他们并不知道彼此的真实起源。

作者注：大家好！这是我第一次写同人小说，而且我并不是一个英语熟练的作者，请注意。因此，语法错误在所难免。这篇小说发生在终章之后，但在两个不同的宇宙中。在两个宇宙里，真嗣和明日香（是惣流，不是式波，注意）发展了一段浪漫关系，但故事情节不同。在一个宇宙中，真嗣是第三次冲击的触发者。在另一个宇宙中，明日香是触发者。在人类补完计划的世界里，他们两人都拒绝了补完，但没有从补完状态中恢复，而是穿越到了另一个平行宇宙。两个时间旅行者在同一个宇宙中，他们彼此相爱（但目前他们还不知道对方也是时间旅行者），并且都有坚定的决心。这个故事讲述了他们穿越之后发生的事情。

附言：非常欢迎大家评论我的作品。如果有人觉得我的设定有趣并决定重写我的作品，那就更加欢迎了。我不会对任何重写本作品的行为主张任何权利。而且我不拥有《新世纪福音战士》的版权。虽然我希望能拥有，这样我就可以改变《终》的结局了。哈哈

---

## Prologue: Shinji

白色。一切都是白色的。

然后突然间，他周围的一切都变成了红色，就像.....就像 LCL 一样。

碇真嗣猛地睁开双眼，试图回忆起发生了什么。他记得 NERV 的入侵，记得与红色二号机并肩作战，对抗 MP EVA；他记得.....被朗基努斯之枪的复制品刺穿。然后.....他看到二号机被撕成碎片，听到她的尖叫，而他只能无助地旁观。

然后他失去了神智，第三次冲击就这样开始了。

在融合中，他看到了人们的灵魂、记忆和情感....随后他感受到了痛苦。他失去了她，不是吗？

他回忆起与那位德国红发女子的时光，他们的笑声、戏谑、亲吻，以及....一切始于第14使徒之后。直到失去，你才懂得珍惜。在被困于 EVA 机体近两周后，红发女孩以为自己再也回不来了，就像...他的母亲一样。当他终于走出EVA时，可能永远失去彼此的恐惧终于促使他们向对方坦白了心意。然后一切都很顺利。直到SEELE开始他们的入侵。

如今，他失去了她。永远地。他别无所求，对这个世界的任何东西都不再有渴望。

‘那么，这个世界就让它灭亡吧。

有其父必有其子。然后，他看到了绫波零。"A-绫波？”他结巴道。我不是你认识的绫波，君。“那你到底是谁？这是哪里？我...死了吗？”我是一名向导。这里是集体潜意识。我能感受到你的痛苦。我不希望你受苦。你想要什么？

我-我-我希-希望她回-回来。我希-希望再次见到她。我-想回到过去。

这就是你想要的吗？回到过去，再次见到她？

“是的。我只是想再见她一面。”

后退，后退，后退.....

他的视野再次变得一片空白。

仿佛过了一个永恒，真嗣的眼睛猛地睁开，立刻听到了直升机引擎的轰鸣声。‘这是哪里？我以为我在 LCL 之海中。’他环顾四周，发现自己被固定在一个座位上。接着，他看到了紫色，闻到了薰衣草香水味。坐在他旁边的，是葛城美里。

他的大脑一片空白。

他的眼睛开始湿润。

‘哦，天哪，天哪，天哪，这是真的吗？’他想起了这个女人，他的守护者，他的指挥官，他的室友，还有他的母亲？他记得美里为了让他进入初号机而牺牲了自己。而她成功了。

他强忍住哭泣的冲动，喘息不已。‘这是什么？是真的吗？什么.....’他环顾四周，发现自己正飞翔在海洋上空。‘海水如此蔚蓝’他心想。正当他在精神世界中徘徊时，一个熟悉的声音将他拉回了现实。

酷！酷酷酷酷！你们快看这个！这是 MIG55 D 运输直升机！

真嗣看向声音的来源，一张熟悉的面孔映入眼帘。

健介兴奋地大叫起来，他的相机一如既往地紧贴着脸，尽可能多地捕捉着这一切。毕竟，他必须记录下这一刻。“这太棒了！谢谢美里小姐给我这次机会，能亲自驾驶其中一架！伙计，有你这样的朋友真是太好了，对吧，真嗣？”

“哦，天哪，是健介。他是真实的。而且他的行为和我记忆中的一模一样。等等，我记得这件事。和之前的一样”

这就是了，他的情感堤坝崩溃了。

“真嗣，你还好吗？”美里脸上带着担忧的表情说道，“真嗣，嘿，真嗣！振作起来！”她轻轻地拍了拍真嗣的右臂。

“啊！啊，是-是的，美里小姐。”如果不是安全带，真嗣肯定会从直升机里飞出去。“我-我没事。”他努力让自己保持镇定。‘不，不是现在。不是这样。他们...他们不能知道我的事。现在不行。还不到时候。哦，天哪，我又能见到她了...我爱你，明日香。等我。’

“你不是一个好的说谎者，真嗣。你在哭。”

“什-什么？你在说什么？这-呃-嗯-是因为风！哈！对！没错。风太大了。”真嗣结结巴巴地说，显得既尴尬又紧张。

美里眯起了眼睛。正当她准备进一步追问时，被健介打断了，“我的天哪！”他喊道，手中的相机疯狂地左右晃动。“五艘航空母舰和四艘战列舰！多么庞大的舰队！你看到了吗，真嗣！？ ”

“是啊，但它们看起来很旧。我怀疑它们还能不能浮起来。”美里说。

“那就是你可爱的小船吗？”冬二的声音平淡地传来。听了美里之前的评论后，他感到失望。‘我只是想和光在第三新东京市好好约会一下。’

“哦，没错！她绝对美极了！”真希波喊道，“那就是联合国的骄傲！辉煌的超级航母，彩虹之上号！”

真嗣在美里被转移注意力后感到松了口气。‘哦，天哪。我又见到她了。我仍然无法相信。这就是你为我做的吗，绫波？’正当他想着自己的半血妹妹时，他看到一个蓝发女孩，与直升机并肩悬浮在空中，就在他前方 50 米处。‘绫波？’他眨了眨眼，女孩消失了。他的大脑终于处理完了周围的信息，让他得以思考。‘这是你给我的礼物吗？好吧，我不会浪费这次机会。我不会逃跑。再也不会。谢谢你，绫波。’

---

## Prologue 2: Asuka

AN: 耶！又是一篇短章，讲述了在统一教义期间，明日香在她所在宇宙（与第一章中的真嗣不同，特此提醒）发生的事情。我不拥有《新世纪福音战士》的版权。

---

她感到困惑。

这是什么地方？一切都是红色的。没有光，没有暗，没有 EVA，没有 NERV，没有人，而且.....没有真嗣。

但并非完全没有真嗣。她能看到他，感受到他的灵魂和记忆。

她看到自己和真嗣在海滩上散步。她看到他们在派对上跳舞。她看到他们一起看电影，手指紧扣。她看到自己和真嗣紧紧相拥，睡在同一张床上，两人脸上都带着平静的表情。她能感受到当他冲进浅间山去救她时那种决心。她感受到依赖，情感，深深的关怀.....她感受到他对她的爱。

一切始于一个吻。

"嘿，真嗣，你想接吻吗？"

他简直不敢相信自己所听到的。难道他那位火辣、异域风情、才华横溢且永远自信的室友，他少数的幻想对象之一，刚刚真的向他提出了接吻的请求？

"什么？" 他立刻拔掉耳塞，目光直视着明日香明亮的蓝色瞳孔。

"一个吻。你从未接过吻，对吧？那我们来试试。"

这肯定是个圈套。一个总是贬低他、指责他、侮辱他的女孩，怎么可能突然向他索吻呢？

'这肯定是个陷阱。当我靠近时，她会退后并骂我是变态，然后打我。''为什么？'

"因为我觉得无聊。'你这个笨蛋，怎么就不明白呢？我喜欢你。我.....就是说不出口。我的天，你真是没胆量！难道你不是一直想这么做吗？等等，他是在拒绝我吗？不，不不不不。他只是迟钝。我得想办法激他一下。'

"因为无聊？但是....."

"你不想在妈妈忌日这天亲吻一个女孩吗？怕她可能正在天堂看着你？" 她带着狡黠的笑容看着他。

"倒也不是。"

"还是说，你害怕了？"

"我才不怕一个小小的吻呢！" '好吧，真嗣。最坏能发生什么？她骂你变态？不，这种事我以前经历多了。再坏也不过如此。总的来说，是她主动要求的。'

"你刷牙了吧？"

"嗯。" 他点点头。

'我的天，他终于接受了。这个笨蛋。' '那么，我来了。'

明日香走近他，凝视着他深蓝色的眼眸。她能看到他脸上淡淡的潮红，以及脖颈侧面跳动得异常剧烈的脉搏。她能感觉到自己的心跳也跳得同样快。她将自己的脸贴近他的，感受着他炽热的呼吸。

'别呼吸，因为会痒。' 她将自己的唇与他紧紧相贴。

哦天哪，这真的发生了！她在吻我！我！她.....喜欢我吗？他的大脑一片混乱，无法正常运转。但他不想这一切停止。随着氧气逐渐耗尽，他感到头晕目眩，双腿发软.....接着他向前倒去，却顺势转身，将明日香一同推倒，并把她压在了身后的桌子上。

那是一个非常愉快的回忆。那晚之后，他们向彼此坦白了心迹，聊起了各自的童年轶事，发现彼此竟有许多相似之处。仿佛他们是同一模块塑造出的两面，却截然不同。这意味着他们能完美地理解对方，无人能及。从那时起，他们便形影不离。他们不在乎旁人的看法，彼此拥有，便已完整。

但如今，她失去了他。

不，她在第 17 使徒的袭击中就已失去了他。

由 SEELE 派遣而来的天使卡乌尔，接近了真嗣，试图理解他的内心。卡乌尔原以为会遇到一个痛苦、孤独且渴望爱的人。他准备好给予这一切。然而，他完全错了。他发现真嗣是一个害羞、关心他人且意志坚定的人。他意识到这一切源于爱。他对她的爱。

卡乌尔别无选择，只能履行他的命运——引发第三次冲击。

他前来阻止他。

渚薰别无选择，只能战斗。完全掌控 EVA 二号机的他，几乎击败了一号机。然而，一号机随即狂暴化，真嗣的同步率达到了 400%。又一次。最终的使者被击

败了。

明日香惊恐地看着视频直播，他的身体逐渐瓦解。她几乎失去了理智。

*Oh gods, this is REALLY happening! She's kissing me! ME! She... likes me?' His brain could not function properly. But he didn't want it to stop. As his oxygen was running out, he felt dizzy, his legs were giving out... and he fell forwards, just to spin around, pushed Asuka backward with him, and pinned Asuka on the table behind her.*

天啊，这真的发生了！她在吻我！我！她.....喜欢我吗？他的思绪一片混乱，无法正常思考。但他不想这一切停止。随着氧气逐渐耗尽，他感到头晕目眩，双腿发软.....他向前倒去，却转了个身，与明日香一同倒下，将她压在了身后的桌子上。

That was a very pleasant memory. They confessed to each other after that night, talked about their childhood dramas, and found themselves a lot alike. It was like they were made out of the same module, but different sides. Which meant they could understand each other perfectly, as no one else could. Then, they were literally glued with each other from then on. They didn't care about other people's opinions. They had each other, and that made them a whole.

那是一个极其美好的回忆。那夜之后，他们彼此坦诚相待，分享了各自的童年故事，惊讶地发现彼此竟如此相似。仿佛他们源自同一模板，却展现出不同的面貌。这使得他们能够心有灵犀，无人能及。自此，他们便紧密相连，不再顾及旁人的眼光。他们拥有彼此，这让他们成为一个完整的整体。

But now, she had lost him.

然而如今，她已与他失之交臂。

No. She lost him during the attack of 17th Angel.

不，她在第 17 使徒的袭击中与他失散了。

*The Nephilim called Kaworu, sent by SEELE, approached Shinji, wanted to understand his heart. Kaworu was expecting someone in pain, lonely, and desperate for love. He'd give him that. However, he was totally wrong. He found Shinji to be a shy, caring, and determined person. He found that it was because of love. His love towards her.*

由 SEELE 派遣的尼菲利姆卡瓦鲁接近了真嗣，意图深入了解他的内心。卡瓦鲁原本预期会遇到一个痛苦、孤独且极度渴望爱的人，并准备给予他这些。但事实出

乎他的意料，他发现真嗣其实是一个害羞、体贴且意志坚定的人。这一切的根源，正是他对她的深情。

*Kaworu had no choice but to fulfill his destiny - to initiate third impact.*  
渚薰别无选择，只能履行他的宿命——启动第三次冲击。

*He came to stop him.*  
他来是为了阻止他。

*Kaworu had no choice but to fight. With total control of EVA Unit 02, he almost defeated Unit 01. Then Unit 01 went berserker. Shinji reached a synch ratio of 400%. Again. And the final messenger was defeated.*

渚薰别无选择，只能投入战斗。他完全掌控 EVA 二号机，几乎击败了一号机。然而，一号机突然狂暴化，真嗣的同步率飙升至 400%。这一幕再次上演，最终使者也因此被击败。

*Asuka watched the video feed in horror as his body disintegrated.*  
明日香惊恐地注视着视频画面，眼睁睁看着他的身体逐渐解体。

*She almost lost her sanity.*  
她几乎丧失了理智。

*And that was the thing that totally destroyed SEELE's scenario.*  
而那件事彻底毁掉了 SEELE 的设想。

*Without hesitation, SEELE ordered an attack on NERV immediately. Unit 02 was destroyed, so she had to pilot Unit 01. Inside the entry plug, she calmed down as she felt a familiar sensation. It was like... like the embrace of Shinji.*

没有丝毫犹豫，SEELE 立刻命令对 NERV 发起攻击。由于二号机已被摧毁，她只能驾驶初号机。在插入栓内，她感受到一种熟悉的触感，心情逐渐平静。那种感觉，仿佛是真嗣的拥抱一般。

*She fought hard against MP EVAs, but she didn't go for plugs. And the sight of a giant white Rei Ayanami was the last straw put on her already lost mind.*

她顽强地对抗着 MP EVA，却未曾选择接入插头。当她目睹那巨大的白色綾波零时，这最后一击彻底击垮了她本已支离破碎的心灵。

Now she was floating in the infinite red sea. She opened her eyes, and saw Rei Ayanami standing beside her. 'What is she doing here? Stupid doll. Her

expression blank as always. I want my Shinji back. Not this emotionless robot.'

此刻，她正漂浮在无垠的红色海洋里。睁眼之际，绫波零的身影映入眼帘。“她为何在此？这无情的玩偶，面无表情一如往常。我渴望的是真嗣，而非这具无心之躯。”

*Is that what you wish for?*

这就是你所期望的吗？

'What? What was that voice?' "Wonder Girl, where am I? What are you doing here? Where is Baka-Shinji?"

'什么？那是什么声音？' "奇迹少女，我这是在哪儿？你来这儿做什么？笨蛋真嗣去哪儿了？"

*This is instrumentality. I am a guide. He is in this world too.*

这是关于工具性的讨论。我是你们的引导者。他也存在于这个世界之中。

'Wha-Shinji is here as well? Mein Gott, I thought I lost him...' "Wonde- Rei, How can I get my Shinji back?"

'哇-真嗣也在这里吗？天哪，我还以为我失去他了呢.....' "奇-丽，我该如何找回我的真嗣呢？"

*Is this what you wish for? To be back with him? Instrumentality here is completed. There is no turning back now. But there is a way, the only way that you can meet him again.*

这就是你心中所愿吗？渴望回到他身边？工具性的进程已告完成，无法逆转。然而，仍有一线希望，是唯一能让你再次与他相逢的路径。

"Yes! I just want to see him again! I-You know I love him!"

没错！我只想再见到他！我——你知道的，我爱他！

*If you can bring him happiness, I will help you.*

若你能让他幸福，我会助你一臂之力。

"Of course! He loves me! I love him! I-I ju-just want to see him again."

当然啦！他很爱我，我也爱他！我——我只是想再见到他。

*Well then, my Child. 那么，孩子。*

"Child? What the heck are you tal-" Her vision went white.

"孩子？你到底在说什么啊-" 她的视线突然变得一片空白。



Swaying. Shaking. Left. Right. Up. Down.  
摇摆不定，左右晃动，上下起伏。

Asuka Langley Soryu shot open her eyes, found herself staring at an unfamiliar ceiling. Her whole body was swaying with the bed, or rather the whole room was swaying. She looked around; her body wrapped around a thin white sheet; her two red A-10 clips were sitting on the table beside her bed.

明日香·兰格雷睁开双眼，映入眼帘的是一片陌生的天花板。她感觉自己的身体随着床铺一起摇晃，实际上，整个房间都在晃动。她环视四周，发现自己被一条薄薄的白色床单包裹着，而那两个红色的 A-10 发夹则静静地躺在床边的桌子上。

'What is this place? It seems like I'm still dizzy, cuz I feel like the world is spinning around me.' She got off the bed, trying to maintain a sense of balance on the floor. 'This place looks familiar. Even the smell of rotten metal feels familiar.' She traced the light source behind her, found it to be a porthole. She immediately hurled herself towards the window. Looking outside, there was only blue and white. They were the sky and the ocean. 'So I'm on a ship, that's why I feel the world's spinning. But what is this ship tho? I don't remember riding any ship this big, much less sleeping on any ship. Except...'

'这是什么地方？我似乎还在晕眩中，感觉世界在我周围旋转。她下了床，试图在地板上保持平衡。这个地方看起来很熟悉。就连腐烂金属的气味也感觉熟悉。她追踪身后的光源，发现是一个舷窗。她立刻向窗户冲去。向外看，只有蓝色和白色。那是天空和大海。 “所以我是在一艘船上，难怪我觉得世界在旋转。但这艘船是什么呢？我不记得乘坐过这么大的船，更不用说在船上睡觉了。除了.....” '

Her train of thought CRASHED.

她的思路突然被打断了。

Kaji Ryoji, a triple-spy, ex-guardian of Asuka Langley Soryu, and ex-boyfriend of Misato Katsuragi, was bored. His mission here, well, the *true mission* here, was to deliver a package that contained the embryo of a God - the first Angel - Adam. He checked the package again, made sure it was safe, and stood up. He was going to find something to do. Well, talking with Asuka would be a good choice, although she could be annoying sometimes. 'Wait for me Katsuragi.' He thought, a small grin appeared on his face. He walked towards Asuka's living quarters. Just

about he was to knock on her door, the door flung open, a swirl of red racing out, just to crash into his chest.

加治良治，身兼三重间谍，曾守护过明日香·兰格雷，与美里葛城有过一段情，此刻感到百无聊赖。他的真正任务，是护送一个内含神之胚胎——首位使徒亚当——的包裹。他再次确认包裹无恙后起身，打算找点乐子。与明日香交谈或许不错，尽管她偶尔令人头疼。“葛城，稍等片刻。”他暗自思忖，嘴角勾起一抹浅笑。他走向明日香的房间，正欲敲门之际，门猛地打开，一抹红色身影疾驰而出，正中他的胸膛。

"Hey, Asuka, what happened?" Kaji said in a worried tone. He had never seen Asuka like this. 'What is this expression on her face? Is

"嘿，明日香，出什么事了？"加持忧心忡忡地说。他从未见过明日香这副模样。'她脸上这表情是什么意思？是

she... crying? But she looks ecstatic. So, it's joyful tears.'

她在哭泣吗？然而她看起来非常兴奋。这么说来，这是喜悦的泪水。

"Hmph? Whoa! Ah, hmm, Kaji!" Asuka was trying hard to keep herself from crying in Kaji's chest. 'Mein Gott, this is really happening. How convenient for me to find Kaji just outside the door. I was to find him, to just make sure that I'm actually riding on Over the Rainbow.' "I was to find you! It's so sweet for you to find me!" 'gods, I hope I don't need to do this anymore. But it may be a better idea to hide who I really am. Just for now.' "哼？哇！啊，嗯，加持！"明日香努力不让自己的泪水在加持的胸前流淌。'我的天，这真的发生了。在门外找到加持真是太方便了。我本就是要找他，只是为了确认我确实在彩虹之上骑行。' "我就是要找你！你能找到我真是太好了！" '天啊，我希望我不再需要这样做。但也许暂时隐藏我的真实身份是个更好的主意。'

"emmm, why are you here, anyway? Have you change your mind already and decide that I'm cute?"

嗯，你为什么在这里呢？是不是已经改变主意，觉得我挺可爱的？

Kaji rolled his eyes, "Listen Asuka, I'm too old for you. You need to find a boyfriend at your age." Asuka couldn't help but grin wider. 'Oh hell yes I am going to find a boyfriend. Mein Gott, I still can't believe it. I got to see him again!'

加治翻了个白眼，对明日香说：“听着，我对你来说太老了。你应该找个同龄的男朋友。”明日香忍不住笑得更开心了，心想：“哦，天哪，我当然要找男朋友。我的天，我还是不敢相信，我又能见到他了！”

She averted her once again teary eyes from the gaze of Kaji, just to see Rei Ayanami standing at the end of the hallway. She blinked, and the girl disappeared.

她又一次避开了卡吉的视线，转而望向走廊尽头，只见绫波零站在那里。她眨了眨眼，那女孩便不见了踪影。

'Was that Ayanami? She... sent me back here? Well, she's not as a  
'那是绫波吗？她.....把我送回来了？嗯，她并不像'

doll as I thought, maybe. Anyways, Thank you, Ayanami.'

或许正如我所想，是个玩偶吧。无论如何，谢谢你，绫波。

---

## Chapter 3: Reunion

AN: Ha! Another chapter finished. Just keep in mind that this fast pace of upload is due to my anger towards roe. (personal opinion.) I am starving. So I need to write something by myself. This work is the food I made. Both for me and for you guys. Anyways, enjoy Asuka and Shinji's first encounter.

AN：哈！又是一章完结。记住，这种更新速度之快，源于我对 ROE 的不满（个人观点）。我饿了，所以得自己写点东西。这部作品就像我亲手做的食物，既满足我也希望你们喜欢。无论如何，尽情享受明日香与真嗣的初次邂逅吧。

I do not own Evangelion.

我没有《新世纪福音战士》的所有权。

---

"Cool cool cool cool cool cool cool cool!" Kensuke shouted, "Any real man will shed tears for these! What an awesome ship!" His hands couldn't stop clicking for even one second.

"酷酷酷酷酷酷酷酷！" 健介激动地喊道，"真正的男人都会为这感动落泪！这船真是太棒了！" 他的手指不停地点击，一刻也停不下来。

'I remembered Toji's hat was blown away by the wind. Should I stop it? Surely it will provide a perfect distraction. No, I'm not ready, yet. I don't know if I can keep myself from giving her a tight embrace the second I see her.' Shinji's train of thought was interrupted by Toji's cries, "Hey! Come

back!" Shinji chuckled, 'Well, everything proceeds as I remembered. However, this time I will be giving her a better first impression. And DON'T STARE AT HER WHEN THE WIND BLOWS

'我记得风把东治的帽子吹走了。我该不该阻止呢？这无疑会是一个绝佳的干扰。不，我还没准备好。我无法确定在见到她的瞬间，自己能否克制住拥抱她的冲动。' 真嗣的思绪被东治的呼喊声打断，"嘿！回来！" 真嗣微微一笑，心想，'一切都在按我记忆中的发展。但这次，我要给她留下更好的第一印象。而且，当风吹起时，千万别盯着她看。

OR I WILL GET SLAPPED.' Sighing internally, Shinji got off the helicopter. "不然我就要挨耳光了。" 真嗣内心叹息一声，从直升机上下来。

"Yo, Asuka! It's time to get up, kiddo. They are here." Asuka was still in her bed, rubbing her eyes. 'It's not even 30 minutes after I got here. I wish I could come to an earlier point in time, just to prepare myself for what's coming.' "Kaji! I'm coming!" Asuka said as sweet as possible. 'weird,' Kaji thought, 'I haven't told her who's here yet, but she is showing so much enthusiasm. Maybe she guessed it must be the Third Child that I have been talking about these days.'

"嘿，明日香！该起床了，小家伙。他们已经到了。" 明日香还躺在床上，揉着眼睛。'我才刚到这里不到 30 分钟。真希望我能早点来，好为即将发生的事做准备。' "加持！我来了！" 明日香尽可能甜美地说。'真奇怪，' 加持心想，'我还没告诉她是谁来了，但她表现得如此热情。也许她猜到了一定是我这些天一直在谈论的第三适格者。'

Changing to the yellow sundress that she had worn during her first meeting with Shinji in her timeline, Asuka walked out of the cabin. Standing on the observation deck, she watched a greenish helicopter made its landing. As soon as the gears touched down, a brown-haired boy came out immediately, a camera held in his hands. 'Just like what I remembered. Now, Soryu, it's time for the show. You have done it before. What's so hard about this? Ha, nothing can stop the Great Asuka Langley Soryu.' She smirked, walked down to the flight deck, and stood 30 meters in front of the helicopter. 'Now, I remembered last time my sundress was blown up by a gust wind, giving those perverted boys hellofa view. It's not gonna happen this time. As for Baka-Shinji, not yet.' She blushed at her last thought, failed to notice a white hat being blown towards her left feet-

明日香换上了那件黄色太阳裙，这是她在自己的时间线里第一次与真嗣见面时穿过的。她走出小屋，站在观察台上，目睹一架绿褐色的直升机缓缓降落。机轮刚一触地，一个棕发男孩便迅速走出，手中紧握着相机。“一切如我所料。惣流，表演时间到了。你曾经历过，这有何难？哈，伟大的惣流·明日香·兰格雷无所畏惧。”她嘴角轻扬，步下飞行甲板，站在直升机前方 30 米处。“记得上次我的太阳裙被风吹起，让那些色狼大饱眼福。这次绝不会重演。至于那个笨蛋真嗣，还没到他出场的时候。”她因为刚才的想法而脸颊泛红，没有察觉到一个白帽子正随风飘向她的左脚边。

SMACK! 砰!

Toji was so concentrated on chasing his hat, and he completely ignored the person standing right in front of him, his head crashed straight into her left thigh.

东治一心追逐着他的帽子，竟未察觉到正前方站着的人，结果一头撞在了她的左大腿上。

"Ouch!" Asuka cried, almost losing her balance. Looking down, she found the Jock Stooge sitting on the ground, using his hand rubbing his head, eyes looking straight forward. Asuka followed his gaze, just to find him staring at the bottom of her sundress-

"哎哟！" 明日香惊呼一声，差点没站稳。她低头一看，只见那个体育生小丑坐在地上，用手揉着脑袋，眼睛直勾勾地盯着前方。明日香顺着他的视线望去，发现他正盯着她太阳裙的裙摆——

SLAP!

"Hey! What was that for!" Toji yelled, standing up.

"嘿！你这是干什么！" 东治站起来喊道。

"It was the viewing fee! Quite a bargain isn't it?" Asuka shouted back.

"这是观看费！真的很划算，对吧？" 明日香回喊道。

"It's overpriced!", Toji said, his hands beginning to unbolt his jeans, "Here's your exchange!"

这价格太高了！" 托基边说边开始解开牛仔褲的扣子，"给你换！

Asuka remembered what was coming, and reacted immediately. She quickly stepped forward, putting her right foot behind Toji's right, her right hand pushed his right shoulder backward. Toji fell onto the flight

deck without resistance. 'I don't have time to deal with you know, Toji. I need to see him now. But I will try not to hurt and get you, or whoever it will be out of the EVA when the 13th attacks.' Unfortunately, Toji had already decided that she was a devil. Ignoring Toji's groans and curses, she stepped forward, just to be greeted by her commander.

明日香预感到即将发生的事情，立刻做出反应。她迅速上前，右脚置于真嗣右脚之后，右手则推着他的右肩向后一送。真嗣毫无反抗地倒在了飞行甲板上。“真嗣，我没时间跟你纠缠，我现在必须去见他。不过，我会尽量不伤害你，或者在第 13 次攻击时让任何人安全离开 EVA。”遗憾的是，真嗣已经认定她是魔鬼。她无视真嗣的呻吟和咒骂，继续前行，却迎面遇到了她的指挥官。

"Hello Asuka! It's good to see you have grown a lot of height." Misato smiled at the Second Child, remembering the last she had seen her, Asuka could be still called a little kid.

"你好，明日香！看到你长高了许多，真是令人高兴。" 美里微笑着对第二适任者说，想起上次见面时，明日香还像个孩子一样。

"Hello Misato! Well my figures have grown as well." She answered her greetings almost with autopilot, since her attention was elsewhere. 'Where is Baka-Shinji? I still don't see him.' She suddenly felt guilty. 'It's good to see Misato again, tho. I have been behaving badly during my early periods living at your apartment. This time, I will try to be nicer. But now, Baka-Shinji.' 'Misato, where is this famous Third Child?' Misato looked around, finding Shinji was still staring at the windshield, his mouth moving. 'Gotta give a good first impression to the beautiful Second Child I have been talking about all day long, huh? Shin-chan?' Misato grinned pointing her finger in his direction, "Yes, Asuka. He's right there."

你好，美里！我的模型也长大了。" 她几乎是下意识地回应了美里的问候，因为她的心思在别处。'笨蛋真嗣到底在哪里？我还是没看到他。' 她突然感到一丝内疚。'不过再次见到美里真是太好了。我刚搬到你公寓时表现得很糟糕。这次，我会尽量表现得更好。但现在，笨蛋真嗣。' "美里，那个著名的第三适格者在哪里？" 美里环顾四周，发现真嗣还在盯着挡风玻璃，嘴巴在动。'得给这位我整天谈论的美丽第二适格者留下好印象，对吧？真嗣君？' 美里笑着指向他的方向，"是的，明日香。他就在那里。"

Although she was looking relatively normal on the outside, her heart was pounding crazily. Following Misato's arm, she saw a young boy with dark brown hair, wearing a white shirt and black trousers. He looked scrawny;

but Asuka knows that body could produce amazing power, not only when his loved ones are in danger, but also during nights... She blushed, but unnoticed by Misato, who was paying attention to the sitting-on-the-floor-groaning Toji. 'Gods, I'm a bigger perv than Misato is. But only to one person. No one takes away MY Shinji. MINE! And I'm completely his as well.' She walked towards the boy, keeping her smirk on the face.

尽管她外表看似平静，内心却如鼓点般狂跳。顺着美里手臂的方向，她看到了一个深棕色头发的少年，穿着白衬衫和黑裤子。他看起来瘦弱；但明日香深知那副身体蕴含着惊人的力量，不仅在他所爱的人面临危险时，也在那些夜晚.....她脸颊微红，但美里并未察觉，她正关注着坐在地上呻吟的冬二。“天啊，我比美里还要变态。但只对一个人。没人能夺走我的真嗣。我的！我也完全属于他。”她走向那个男孩，脸上带着得意的微笑。

Meanwhile, just outside the cabin of the helicopter, stood Shinji Ikari. He was looking at the reflection of himself through the windshield, practicing his introduction.

与此同时，在直升机驾驶舱外，碇真嗣站在那里，透过挡风玻璃看着自己的倒影，反复练习着自我介绍。

"[Hello, Miss Soryu. My name is Ikari Shinji, the pilot of Unit 01, the Third Child. It's nice to meet you.]" He said his introduction in German again, remembering how his Asuka had taught him. 'Not bad, Shinji. Not bad at all. Now let's go and see her.' He then heard a distinct sound of a slap. He couldn't help but giggle. 'Sounds like what happened has happened.' He made several deep breaths, quietly repeated his introduction in German again, and turned around.

"[你好，Soryu 小姐。我叫 Ikari Shinji，是 01 机体的驾驶员，第三适格者。很高兴见到你。]" 他再次用德语说了自己的介绍，回想起 Asuka 教他的情景。'不错，Shinji。相当不错。现在我们去见她吧。' 接着他听到了一声明显的巴掌声。他忍不住笑了。'看来事情已经发生了。' 他做了几次深呼吸，再次默默地用德语重复了自己的介绍，然后转过身。

Just to meet the Second Child's bright blue eyes directly. 'Oh my gods, it's really him/her!' They both thought, relief,

只为直视二孩那双明亮的蓝眼睛。“哦，天哪，真的是他/她！”两人心中都感到一阵释然，

nervousness, joyfulness, and love flooded their minds. They both stood there for a while, neither of them saying anything. Their brain had just stopped trying to process the flood of emotion. It was Asuka who got her composure back at first, "What, why are you staring at me, Third Child? Amazed by my look? Have a crush on me already? Huh? Perv." Shinji looked like he was just stroke by a lightning bolt, his body shivered violently once. 'Oh gods, it's her, the voice, the hair, the attitude... oh my God I think I'm gonna cry!' He fought back his tears and swallowing hard, "[So-Sorry! H-Hello, Miss Soryu. I-]" He stammered as he saw her eyes widened, looking shocked, 'Wait, he does he know my name? I haven't introduced myself yet. And he knows German? Mein Gott, this Shinji is beyond my expectations.

紧张、喜悦与爱意在他们心中交织。两人静立片刻，无言以对。他们的大脑似乎已无法处理这突如其来的情感冲击。明日香率先找回冷静，挑眉问道：“干嘛，盯着我看什么，第三适格者？被我迷住了？这么快就对我有意思了？哼，色狼。”真嗣仿佛遭雷击般一震，浑身颤抖。‘天啊，真的是她，那声音，那发丝，那气场.....我的天，我快忍不住眼泪了！’他强忍泪意，硬生生咽下哽咽，“[对-对不起！H-你好，Soryu 小姐。I-]”他结巴着，却见她眼中闪过惊讶，‘等等，他怎么知道我的名字？我还没自我介绍呢。难道他还懂德语？’天哪，这个真嗣真是出乎我的意料。

Maybe somethings are different in this world.' "Ahem, How do you know my name, Third Child?" Shinji froze. 'Hell, I forgot about the fact that I shouldn't have known her name yet!' "Ah, that, Mi-Misato- san told me your name!" He quickly made up a lie.

或许在这个世界上，有些事情是不同的。' "嗯，你怎么知道我的名字，三子？" 真嗣愣住了。'糟糕，我忘了我还不应该知道她的名字！' "啊，那个，是美里小姐告诉我的！" 他赶紧找了个借口。

"Fine, whatever. But I still gotta do this myself. I am Asuka Langley Soryu, the pilot of Unit 02, the second child. Charmed, huh?" She finished with a smirk.

"好吧，随便。但我还是得自己来做这件事。我是惣流·明日香·兰格雷，02 号机的驾驶员，第二适格者。很高兴认识你，是吧？" 她带着一丝讥讽结束了这句话。

Shinji took a deep breath, "[I am Ikari Shinji. It's nice to meet you.]"

"[我是碇真嗣。很高兴见到你。]"



"[So, I suppose you know German? Who taught you?]" Asuka couldn't help but smiled.

"[那么，我想你懂德语吧？是谁教你的呢？]" 明日香不禁微笑起来。

'You taught me.' Shinji smiled as well, 'Her smile is so beautiful, oh gods I love her so much.' "[Ah, just a little. Misato taught me. She was your tutor in Germany, right?]"

'是你教我的。' 真嗣也露出了微笑，'她的笑容真是太美了，天啊，我太爱她了。'

"[啊，只是稍微学了一点。是美里教我的。她不是你在德国的导师吗？]"

"[Good, Third Child. Now, let's-]" Just as Asuka was about to say that they should be back with others, she was interrupted by Misato's yell across the flight deck, "Hey, you two lovebirds! Having a crush on each other already? Let's get back to the bridge!" They both blushed as red as Asuka's hair hearing those words, "Coming!" They shouted in unison; side effects of synchronization training still haunting.

"[好，第三个孩子。现在，让我们-]" 明日香正要提议他们应该和其他人一起回去，却被美里在飞行甲板上的喊声打断："嘿，你们这对小情侣！已经互相喜欢上了吗？快回舰桥来！" 听到这些话，他们的脸红得和明日香的头发一样，"来了！" 他们齐声喊道；同步训练的副作用仍在困扰着他们。

While Misato and the Captain of Over the Rainbow were doing their exchange just like how he remembered, Shinji thought he needs to do something this time. 'Asuka hates me being spineless. Maybe this time I'll show her how confident I had become. Of course, it was Asuka who helped me be more confident.' He listened to the conversation carefully, trying to find a good spot to interrupt and teach the arrogant captain a good lesson.

美里与“彩虹之上”的队长正进行着一如往昔的对话，真嗣觉得这次自己必须有所行动。“明日香不喜欢我软弱的样子。或许这次，我可以向她证明我已经变得多么自信。毕竟，是明日香让我变得更加自信。”他全神贯注地听着他们的交谈，寻找着恰当的时机介入，给那位自大的队长上一课。

"... Guarding a toy?" The Captain spat, twisting to stare out at the tarp covering the gigantic machine a few ships over. "This is quite a grandiose escort for the entire Pacific Fleet."

"...守卫一个玩具？" 上尉不屑地吐了口唾沫，转身凝视着几艘船外那覆盖着巨型机器的防水布。“这阵仗，简直是为整个太平洋舰队准备的盛大护卫。”

'Now, this is the time to get him to show some respect.' Just about Shinji was trying to speak, Asuka, who was standing right behind him, snorted, "Huh, how interesting. An old man who sits on the bridge every day, hadn't fought a single enemy face to face, trying to tell the pilot who risked his life every time he was saving the world from extraterrestrial threats, including your asses, more than once, that the last defense of humanity is a toy? Mein Gott, that's how you show your respect to us?" 现在，是时候让他表现出一些尊重了。就在真嗣试图开口时，站在他身后的明日香冷笑道：“哼，真有意思。一个每天坐在桥上的老头，从未亲自上阵与敌人交锋，却试图告诉那位每次都在冒着生命危险从外星威胁中不止一次拯救世界（包括你们的性命）的驾驶员，人类的最后一道防线只是个玩具？我的天，这就是你们对我们表示尊重的方式吗？”

There was a long-lasting silence, everyone seemed to be in utter shock. 'God damn Asuka, where did that come from? Was she... defending ME? Maybe she was just trying to say that she's elite, that's all. Although I have always loved her prideful attitude.' Shinji stammered, "Errr, Than-Thanks, Asuka. That, emmm, was very nice of you." 长时间的沉默笼罩着，每个人都显得极为震惊。“该死的明日香，这话从何而来？她是在...为我辩护吗？或许她只是想表明自己是精英，仅此而已。尽管我一向欣赏她那傲慢的态度。”真嗣结结巴巴地说道，“呃，谢-谢谢，明日香。那，嗯，你真是太好了。”

"What else do you expect from me?" Asuka's expression changed "你还有什么期望我做的吗？" 明日香表情变了 from a frown to a smirk. 从皱眉转变为讥笑。

'This Asuka feels... weird. She's being friendly to me. This early.' Shinji thought, a small smile appearing on his face. 'Maybe this time, we can get together earlier.' '这个明日香感觉...有点怪。她这么早就对我很友好。'真嗣暗自思忖，脸上不禁浮现出一抹微笑。'或许这次，我们能更早地走到一起。'

"Well, just a reminder," Misato said, snapping the folder shut and placing it under her arm. "in the case of an emergency, NERV's military authority overrides your own." Shinji's friends moved their stares from Asuka to Misato in a mixture of shock and indifference. To most of them, Misato

was a cool older sister, who seemed like the least likely person to be a Director of Operations for a military group, yet here she was, speaking and acting completely different to how she usually did back at home.

“对了，提醒一下，”美里合上文件夹，夹在腋下说道，“在紧急情况下，NERV 的军事权限会优先于你。”真嗣的朋友们从明日香身上移开视线，转向美里，表情中既有震惊也有漠然。在他们大多数人眼中，美里就像一个酷酷的姐姐，似乎最不可能成为军事组织的作战部长，但她现在就在这里，言行举止与平时在家时大相径庭。

"Well, I see you are as gallant as ever." The voice was very man-ish, causing the whole group to turn around, noticing a man with ponytail and a crooked smile.

"看来你依旧英勇不减当年。" 这声音颇具男子气概，引得众人纷纷回头，只见一位扎着马尾、面带狡黠微笑的男子。

"Kaji!" Asuka cried, turning quickly and raising her hand in greeting.

"加吉！" 明日香喊了一声，迅速转过身来，举手示意。

Misato turned, immediately gasping in terror, a scowl coming across her face.

美里转身之际，顿时惊恐万分，倒吸一口凉气，脸上随即显露出愤怒的表情。

"Mr. Kaji, how many times do I have to tell you, you must not insist to invite yourself onto the bridge." The Captain finally said something after rendered utter shock by Asuka's earlier comments.

"加治先生，我得跟你说多少遍，你不能硬要自己上桥。" 船长在听了明日香之前的评论后，终于忍不住开口了。

"Oh, my apologies," Kaji replied, but sounding unapologetic, walking into the room. "I just had to come to see Asuka again after coming back onto the ship after my delivery. But it seems some other lovely people have arrived as well." Kaji gave a sly smile, directed straight at Misato, who growled in annoyance and stomped out of the room. The rest of the group left the room as well, walked down the stairs leading to lower levels. Misato soon followed them after final

"哦，抱歉，" 加治答道，语气中却毫无歉意，他走进房间。"我只是想在送货回来后再见到明日香。不过看来还有其他可爱的人也来了。" 加治狡黠一笑，直视着美里，美里恼火地哼了一声，气冲冲地离开了房间。其他人也跟着离开，走下通往低层的楼梯。美里随后也跟了上去。

exchange of words with the Captain.

## 与船长的对话

The whole group of people, including Kaji, were being squeezed in a small elevator. This time around, Asuka didn't choose to stand beside Kaji, but instead stood in front of Shinji, hoping to start some sort of conversation. Unfortunately, the room was so small, she couldn't help but had her body pushed against Shinji. Not that she minded, tho.

一群人，包括 Kaji，都被挤在一个狭小的电梯里。这次，Asuka 没有选择站在 Kaji 旁边，而是站在了 Shinji 前面，希望能开始某种对话。然而，由于空间过于狭小，她不得不紧贴着 Shinji。不过，她对此并不介意。

"Hey! Watch where your hands' at!" Misato shouted, her eyes staring daggers at Kaji, who had a slight frown on his face, replied, "I can't help it!"

嘿！注意你的手放哪儿了！" 美里喊道，目光如刀般盯着加持，加持微微皱眉，无奈地回应："我也是情不自禁啊！

Misato growled as the door finally opened, and the group, in their haste to get out, just to stumble each other and ended up tangling together on the floor.

当门终于打开时，Misato 咆哮了一声，众人急忙想出去，却互相绊倒，结果在地板上纠缠成一团。

With a death glare at Kaji, Misato stood and entered a small dining area.

Kaji quickly stood and followed her, a small smile gracing his lips. Shinji

stood and turned toward Asuka, and decided to give a hand out to her.

With a small grin, she let the boy take her hand and pull herself up.

Letting go of each other's hand, they both entered the dining area. Small

smiles on both their faces. Two boys then entered, both sat next to

Misato, who had a frown on her normally happy face. Kaji sat across from her, with a sly smile, trying to flirt with her with his foot tapping hers.

Beside him, sat Asuka and Shinji, amusement on both their faces.

美里对卡吉投以严厉的目光，然后站起身走进一个小餐厅。卡吉迅速起身跟随，

嘴角露出一抹微笑。真嗣也站了起来，转向明日香，决定向她伸出援手。明日香

微微一笑，让真嗣握住她的手，将自己拉起来。两人松开手后，一同走进了餐

厅，脸上都带着淡淡的微笑。随后，两个男孩进入餐厅，坐在美里旁边，她平时

快乐的脸上此刻带着一丝不悦。卡吉坐在她对面，带着狡黠的微笑，用脚轻触她的脚，试图调情。他旁边坐着明日香和真嗣，两人脸上都带着看热闹的笑容。

"So," Kaji started, his foot still tapping Misato's. "Are you seeing anyone right now?" He asked sounding almost innocent.

"那么，" 加持开口道，脚依旧轻敲着美里的脚。"你现在有交往的对象吗？" 他的语气听起来几乎显得很单纯。

"I don't see why that's any of your business." Misato replied, putting her arms across her chest, trying to not look towards Kaji's face.

"我不明白这怎么就成你的事了。" Misato 答道，双臂抱胸，尽量避开 Kaji 的目光。

"I'm hurt." Kaji replied, leaning back and relaxing, and turning towards Shinji. "So, Shinji. I hear you're living with Katsuragi right now?"

我受伤了。" 加持回答道，身体向后靠，放松下来，转向真嗣。"那么，真嗣，听说你现在和葛城同住？

"Yeah, that's right." Shinji replied, a grin appearing on his face while

"是的，没错。" 真嗣回答道，脸上浮现出笑容，

he remembered what's gonna happen.

他记得接下来会发生什么。

"Tell me something, Shinji." Kaji said with a smile, shifting his glance over at Misato for a moment, who continued to snort and grown. "Is she still, how do I say it... Wild in bed?"

告诉我点事儿，真嗣。" 加持笑着说，目光短暂地转向美里，她继续哼哼唧唧。"她还是那么，我该怎么形容呢...在床上很狂野吗？

"WHAT!" Was the collective reaction from anyone who wasn't Shinji, Kaji, or Asuka. Utter shock and bafflement across the boys' faces, their hands trying to hide their faces from reality. Shinji and Asuka both couldn't help but laugh, much of a surprise to each other.

"什么！" 这是除了真嗣、加持和明日香之外所有人的共同反应。男孩们的脸上写满了震惊和困惑，他们用手试图遮挡现实。真嗣和明日香都不禁笑出声来，这对彼此来说都是一个意外的惊喜。

Misato shouted the loudest, her face turned deep red which would make Asuka's Unit 02 feel ashamed. "Wha... Why..." She grumbled, before anger

flooded her and she slammed her hands on the table, causing cups on the table to jump, her face merely inches in front of Kaji. "Just what the hell are you implying by that!?"

美里喊得最为响亮，她的脸涨得通红，连明日香的二号机见了都会自愧不如。她嘟囔着：“什...为什么...”怒火随即涌上心头，她双手重重拍在桌上，震得杯子都跳了起来，脸庞几乎贴到了加持面前。“你这么说到底是什么意思！？”

Kaji glanced at her, an amused look on his face, "So, it seems that Katsuragi hasn't changed at all. Am I right, Shinji?" Misato exhaled hard and collapsed back into her seat, her head buried in her hands. "Uh, she was quite lousy at first, but becoming better every day." Shinji giggled, feeling satisfied with his joke as he saw Asuka laughed harder. "I'm more interested in how you knew my name?"

加治瞥了她一眼，脸上带着一丝戏谑的表情，“看来，葛城一点都没变。我说得对吗，真嗣？”美里重重地叹了口气，瘫坐在椅子上，双手捂着头。“呃，她一开始相当糟糕，但每天都在进步。”真嗣咯咯地笑着，看到明日香笑得更厉害，他对自己的玩笑感到满意。“我更感兴趣的是，你是怎么知道我的名字的？”

"Well, I'd ought to know you. Cuz you're famous in our business!" Kaji replied, looking at Shinji directly. "The famous Third Child! Who was able to pilot an Evangelion in combat for the first time in his life with no training at all."

哎，我当然认识你。我们在你这行可是鼎鼎大名！”加持回应道，目光直射真嗣。“那位著名的第三适格者，初次驾驶 EVA 便能在实战中无师自通。

Asuka had just helped herself from laughing, 'That's the spirit, Shinji. This Shinji is still the same as my Shinji, although with more sense of humor. And he's elite, too. I'm not letting you go this time, Shinji.' The young girl thought, smiling at the boy next to her.

明日香刚刚忍俊不禁，心中暗想：“真嗣，你还是那么有精神。现在的你和我记忆中的真嗣一样，只是多了几分幽默感。而且你依然那么出色。这次我绝不会让你再离开，真嗣。”少女微笑着望向身旁的男孩。

"Thanks, I guess, but it was nothing really. It was all luck. My EVA went... What's that called? Ye, 'berserk' the first time. I didn't do anything by myself." Shinji replied, scratching the back of his head, trying to act like embarrassed.

“谢谢吧，不过真没什么大不了的，全靠运气。我的 EVA 第一次.....那叫什么？对

了，‘暴走’。我完全没靠自己做什么。”真嗣回答时挠着头，装作有些不好意思。

"Well Luck is a great talent to have, Shinji." Kaji smiled, before  
"运气真是个难得的天赋，真嗣。" 加持微笑着说道，随后

standing abruptly. "Well, it's been nice, but I must take my leave. I will see you all later." He exited the room, without Asuka following  
他突然起身说道：“很高兴与大家相聚，但我现在得走了。回头见。”说完，他独自离开了房间，没有让明日香跟随。

him this time, much to Shinji's surprise.  
这次竟然是他，让真嗣感到非常意外。

"Okay, see you." Shinji replied, giving the man a small wave. 'Still the old Kaji I remembered. This time, you are not dying on my watch.  
"好的，再见。" 真嗣回答道，向那人轻轻挥了挥手。'还是我记忆中的那个加持。这次，你不会在我的注视下死去。

But why is Asuka not following him? Wasn't she just all over him?' Misato's head still in her hands, staring directly at the table. "This has to be a really bad joke, no it's a nightmare."  
但为何明日香没有跟随他？她刚才不是还缠着他吗？'美里双手抱头，直视着桌子。"这肯定是个极其糟糕的玩笑，不，这简直就是一场噩梦。"

Just as Shinji was wondering what had caused Asuka's behavior change so suddenly, she stood up, grabbing Shinji's wrist. "You are coming with me, Third Child." She said, with a slight joyfulness in her voice, but unnoticed by others. Looking around, Shinji found a sympathetic look on Toji's face, but a small jealous look on Kensuke's. 'Oh, this time he didn't get slapped. That's why he looks jealous. Don't worry Kensuke, your dream will end pretty soon if she finds out that you will be taking those pictures of her hurr hurr hurr'

正当真嗣疑惑是什么让明日香的行为突然改变时，她站起身，紧紧抓住了真嗣的手腕。“你跟我来，第三适格者。”她的话语中带着一丝不易察觉的喜悦。环顾四周，真嗣注意到阿薰投来的同情目光，而真希则流露出一丝嫉妒。“哦，这次他没被扇耳光，难怪他看起来嫉妒。别担心真希，如果明日香发现你要偷拍她的照片，你的美梦很快就会破灭的。”

Without hesitation, he followed Asuka out of the dining room.

他毫不迟疑地跟随明日香离开了餐厅。

During their ride to the cargo ship which held Unit 02, both Shinji and Asuka were immersed in their thoughts. They were both making plans of the next event which would be an Angel attack, trying to find a perfect way not only to defeat the Angel, but also warm up their relationship. Their thoughts were interrupted as the lifeboat collided with the cargo ship. Asuka climbed onto the deck, giving a hand out to Shinji, who gladly accepted.

在前往装载零号机的货船途中，真嗣和明日香各自沉思。他们都在为即将到来的使徒袭击制定计划，不仅希望战胜使徒，还希望能借此机会改善彼此的关系。当救生艇与货船相撞时，他们的思绪被打断。明日香率先爬上甲板，向真嗣伸出手，真嗣欣然接受了她的帮助。

Asuka lifted the cover slightly, showing Shinji a part of Unit 02. Looking at Unit 02 herself, she remembered that her mother's soul was trapped in it. 'Mum, you are always here for me. I thought I could never feel your love again.' Her train of thought was interrupted by Shinji, "Wow, Unit 02 looks fiery, I guess it suits you very much." Shinji said, feeling nervous as he was not sure how Asuka would think of his comment. "Well, it's not only the look," Asuka showed a wider grin as her ego was boosted, 'Old habits die hard', she thought, and continued bragging, "After all, Unit-00 and 明日香轻轻掀起盖子，向真嗣展示了一部分二号机。看着二号机，她想起了母亲的灵魂被困在其中。“妈妈，你一直在这里陪着我。我以为我再也感受不到你的爱了。”她的思绪被真嗣打断，“哇，二号机看起来很炽热，我觉得它非常适合你。”真嗣说道，感到紧张，因为他不确定明日香会如何看待他的评论。“嗯，不仅仅是外表，”明日香露出更宽的笑容，她的自尊心得到了提升，“旧习难改”，她想，并继续吹嘘，“毕竟，零号机和.....”

Unit-01 were created as part of the development process of an Evangelion. Being the Prototype and the Test Type respectively. That explains why it easily synced with an untrained pilot like you is proof of that." Shinji couldn't help but feel amused at her comment, 'Still the same old Asuka, so prideful.' "But Unit-02 is different! My Evangelion was created for actual combat purposes, the world's first Evangelion Production Model! The final step for an Evangelion!" She didn't climb to the chest of her EVA this time, since she knew what's gonna happen next;



standing on top of it would be dangerous with underwater explosions nearby. Just the next moment, they both felt the cargo ship started shaking, hearing distinct yet muffled sound of blast. "It's the Angel." They both murmured simultaneously, surprised at each other's choice of words. 'Why did he/she say that?' They both thought, but quickly snapped out of it, since the more important thing is to defeat the Angel.

Unit-01 作为 EVA 开发过程中的产物，分别担当原型机和测试机的角色。这正是它能轻易与未经训练的你同步的原因。”真嗣对她的评论感到一丝好笑，心想，“明日香还是那么骄傲自满。”“但 Unit-02 可不一样！我的 EVA 是为实战而生的，全球首台量产型 EVA，代表着 EVA 的终极形态！”这次她没有爬上 EVA 的胸口，因为她清楚接下来会发生什么；站在上面在附近水下爆炸的环境中太过危险。紧接着，两人都感觉到货船开始震动，听到了沉闷但清晰的爆炸声。”是使徒来了。两人不约而同地低声自语，对对方的用词感到诧异。心中暗想：“他/她为何如此说？”然而，他们迅速将注意力转回，毕竟击败天使才是当务之急。

Asuka was tempting to change to her plug suit right there, but soon she remembered that this Shinji hadn't become her boyfriend yet. So she decided to come to the same staircase she had used before, "Don't peek" was all she said to Shinji before running down to a lower level and starting to change. Shinji, on the other hand, was having no intentions to peek. 'It's not like something I haven't seen before,' He felt amused at his own thought, but the image of Asuka's body during certain nights had started to make his certain parts feel uncomfortable. 'Ah, snap out of pervy thoughts! Or the next moment she sees you like this, you'll definitely ruin her friendliness toward you! Think about non-pervy thoughts!' To his relief, the image of his naked father cooled him down immediately, but he felt like he was about to puke. "Ok, you can look," Asuka said, her right hand throwing another plug suit towards him, "put this on."

明日香差点就在那里换上她的插入栓服，但她很快想起这个真嗣还不是她的男朋友。于是她决定回到之前用过的楼梯，对真嗣说了句“不许偷看”，就跑到楼下开始换衣服。而真嗣这边，完全没有偷看的打算。‘又不是没见过，’他对自己的想法感到好笑，但某些夜晚明日香身体的画面开始让他某些部位感到不适。‘啊，别再想这些色情的东西了！不然她看到你这样，肯定会破坏她对你的友好态度！想想不色情的事情吧！让他感到宽慰的是，父亲赤裸的影像立刻让他冷静下来，但他几乎要呕吐。“行，你可以看，”明日香说道，同时右手向他抛去另一件插头服，“穿上它。”

"Err, okay. I guess you want me to pilot Unit 02 with you?" Shinji asked with an interested tone.

"嗯，好吧。你是想让我和你一起驾驶 2 号机吗？" 真嗣带着感兴趣的语气问道。

"Of course, Third Child! I will show you my superior piloting skills!" She finished with a smirk on her face, leaving Shinji behind to change.

"当然，小三！我会让你见识到我卓越的驾驶技巧！" 她带着一抹得意的微笑说完，留下真嗣去更衣。

Once they both got into the entry plug, Asuka immediately started the activation sequence. She remembered Shinji's lack of German, but it seems like this Shinji knows decent German. So she asked, and just as the first syllabus flew out of her mouth, Shinji's voice also came out at the same time, "I wonder..." they both said, and both stopped abruptly, both felt confused. "Ladies first, Third!" After a moment of silence, Asuka said, "I wonder could you think in German?"

两人进入插入栓后，明日香立刻启动了激活程序。她记得真嗣不懂德语，但眼前这个真嗣似乎德语说得不错。于是她开口询问，刚吐出第一个音节，真嗣的声音也同时响起：“我在想……”他们异口同声，随即都停了下来，感到一阵困惑。

“女士优先，第三！”片刻沉默后，明日香问道：“我在想，你能用德语思考吗？”

"Ah, I was wondering could you switch language mode to Japanese, since I don't know that much of German." Shinji replied, feeling cold sweat forming on his forehead.

"啊，我在想你能不能把语言模式切换成日语，因为我对德语不太了解。" 真嗣回答道，额头上不禁冒出了冷汗。

"Fair enough," Asuka turned around, "Switch base language to Japanese." The EVA was successfully activated, both teens felt a

"说得有理，"明日香转过身，"将基础语言切换为日语。" EVA 成功启动，两位少年都感受到了

warm sensation around them. "Evangelion Unit 02, move out!"

周围感到一阵暖意。"福音战士 02 号，立即出动！"

"Emergency communication from the Othello! Evangelion Unit-02 is

"来自奥赛罗号的紧急通讯！初号机，

currently in the process of activation!"

当前正处于激活阶段！

"What did you say!?" The Captain said annoyedly, just to see another Destroyer of his fleet got cut in halves. Misato happily leant hard against the window and watched intently. "Alright! Let's go, Asuka!" She said in joyfulness and excitement, a large smile on her face, directed at the Captain, who dropped cold sweat at her. Across the sea, the cover started to shift quickly, as Unit-02 started to move from its position underneath. The Captain grabbed the portable radio and shouted into it aggressively. "Abort the activation! We can't let something like that have its way in the sea!" Misato jumped in and pushed the Captain aside, "Don't listen to that moron, Asuka! Just launch the Eva! We have a job to do here!"

你说什么！？" 舰长恼怒地说道，眼睁睁看着自己舰队中的另一艘驱逐舰被切成两半。美里开心地用力靠在窗户上，专注地观看着。"好极了！我们走吧，明日香！" 她兴奋地说道，脸上挂着大大的笑容，对着舰长，后者被她吓得直冒冷汗。海面上，覆盖物开始迅速移动，二号机从其下方的位置开始行动。舰长抓起便携式无线电，愤怒地对着它喊道："中止激活！我们不能让那种东西在海上为所欲为！" 美里跳进来，把舰长推到一边，"别听那个蠢货的，明日香！直接发射EVA！我们这里有任务要完成！

"What the hell do you think you're doing!?" The Captain growled, pushing Misato's head down to get her outta the way, "NERV Berlin in Germany gave us permission to bring that thing over to you, and until then it is under the strict command of this fleet. You can't just bypass that command with your own!"

你到底在想什么！？" 船长咆哮着，将美里的头按下让她让开，"德国柏林的NERV已经批准我们将那东西运送过来，在此之前，它完全受这支舰队的严格指挥。你不能擅自用自己的命令来绕过这一指令！

Misato growled and fought back, trying to take over the radio, "Screw your authority! Who gives a damn about your procedures, this is an emergency!"

美里怒吼着反抗，试图夺取无线电控制权，"去你的权威！谁在乎你的程序，这是紧急情况！"

"Oh no." The First Officer said, using his binoculars directed at Unit 02, now standing over the cargo ship. "Unit-02 is still using the B- Type

Equipment!" Although he disliked NERV, he did understand the technical aspects. "What!?" Both the Captain and Misato shouted, rushing back to look out at Unit-02. "Where's Kaji?"

哎呀，糟糕。”副驾驶员透过双筒望远镜注视着站在货船上的 02 号单位，说道：“02 号单位还在使用 B 型装备！”虽然他对 NERV 没有好感，但对技术细节还是有所了解的。“什么！？”船长和美里异口同声地惊呼，急忙转身望向 02 号单位。“加治去哪儿了？

"You mean that pony-tailed man? I think he left the ship after he exited the dining room. Saying he had to make a delivery or something."

Kensuke said, "I met him on the flight deck when I was taking a walk around and taking pictures. I had a beautiful shot of the Yak-38 he was piloting!"

你是说那个扎马尾的男人吗？我想他在离开餐厅后下了船，说是要去送个东西之类的。”健介说道，“我在飞行甲板上散步拍照时碰见了。我拍到了他驾驶的雅克-38 的精彩照片！

"Asuka! We are still using a B-Type equipment! If we fall into the Ocean, then we are done for!" Shinji said in a worried tone.

"明日香！我们还在用 B 型装备呢！万一掉进海里，那可就全完了！”真嗣忧心忡忡地说。

"I know!" Asuka said, "And we are going to go back to the main carrier that holds the umbilical cable! Misato!"

我明白！”明日香喊道，“我们要返回那艘带有脐带电缆的主运输船！美里！

"Yes, Asuka," Misato's voice appeared in the comms, "Do you want me to set up external power here?"

是的，明日香，”美里通过通讯设备询问，“需要我在这里安排外部电源吗？

"Ja! Wunderbar." Asuka smiled confidently, 'Last time I fell cuz the stupid elevator couldn't hold my weight. This time I'll try to avoid stepping on to it again.' Hearing nothing coming from Shinji, Asuka asked, "Shinji, have you played hopscotch?"

是的！太好了。”明日香自信地微笑着，心想：‘上次摔倒是因为那笨电梯承受不住我的重量。这次我得小心别再踩上去了。’见真嗣没反应，她便问：“真嗣，你玩过跳房子吗？

"Wha-" was all Shinji was able to mutter as his mouth was shut by over gravity, caused by Asuka pulling back the control yoke, thinking about the movement in her head at the same time, and Unit 02

"Wha-" 是真嗣唯一能发出的声音，由于明日香拉回操纵杆，同时在大脑中构思着动作，导致重力过大，使得他的嘴被迫闭上，还有 02 号机

leaped into the sky.

一跃冲天。

Landing hardly on to the flight deck of Over the Rainbow, Unit 02 stood up, pulling out it's prog knife from a shoulder pylon. The blade started vibrating at supersonic speeds. In front of them was the 6th Angel, Gaghiel. The Angel came out of the water and fluttered straight towards Unit 02. Asuka quickly made a side step, avoiding direct impact with the Angel, at the same time sliced the Angel's right side open with her prog knife. The Angel cried in pain as tons of LCL flow out of the cut. The Angel desperately wanted to go back into the ocean, but Unit 02 wouldn't let it. Grabbing firmly using one had on a side fin of the Angel, Unit 02 kept stabbing and slicing it. The angel twisted its body violently as the pain was becoming unbearable. The aircraft carrier was certainly not designed to withstand this kind of stress, and its mainframe started to give out. Both Asuka and Shinji had noticed the shaking of the body of the ship. The people inside the bridge watched in horror as they heard the sound of crushing metal and watched the flight deck starting to bend.

02 号机艰难地降落在“彩虹之上”的飞行甲板上，随即站起身，从肩部挂架上拔出进度刀。刀刃开始以超音速振动。在他们面前的是第六使徒 Gaghiel，它从水中跃出，直扑向 02 号机。明日香迅速侧身闪避，避免了与使徒的直接碰撞，同时用进度刀在使徒的右侧划开一道深深的伤口。使徒痛苦地嘶吼，大量 LCL 从伤口中涌出。使徒拼命想要回到海洋，但 02 号机紧抓其侧鳍，不断刺戳和切割，使徒痛苦地扭曲身体，疼痛变得难以忍受。这艘航空母舰原本并非为承受如此巨大的压力而设计，如今其主体结构已开始出现问题。明日香和真嗣都察觉到了船体的剧烈震动。在舰桥内，人们惊恐万分，耳边是金属被挤压的刺耳声响，眼前则是飞行甲板逐渐扭曲变形的景象。

"Asuka! We need to get this Angel off the ship!" Shinji cried.

"明日香！我们得把这个使徒从船上弄走！" 真嗣喊道。

我明白了！”明日香喊道，操控二号机牢牢抓住使徒，“快来帮我一起拉！”

他们齐心协力，紧紧握住控制杆，使劲拉动。02 号机的双眼随即亮起，释放出强大的能量。天使被拖入水中，倒退着摔在飞行甲板上，嘴巴大张，核心暴露无遗。明日香抓住时机，操控 02 号机一跃而入，直抵天使的核心。她再次拔出程序刀，倾尽全力，猛地刺入核心之中。

天使最后一次痛苦地呼喊。

Just as the Angel was about to explode, Asuka quickly put out her AT-Field, trying to shield herself and the carrier from the explosion. 'I  
就在天使即将爆炸的瞬间，明日香迅速展开 AT 力场，试图保护自己和运输机不受爆炸影响。'我

“绝不会让你伤害他们！妈妈，你能帮我吗？”

在《彩虹之上》的舰桥上，当航母停止摇晃并继续漂浮时，所有人都松了一口气。然而，由于主框架遭受了严重损坏，它无法持续运作太久。就在美里和男孩们对 02 号机的情况感到疑惑时，他们听到了正下方传来的巨大爆炸声。但并没

有水柱喷涌而出，取而代之的是，他们看到一个熟悉的红色身影从水中飞出，迅速降落在飞行甲板上。红色巨人 02 号机用最后的能量储备摆出了胜利的姿态。

SEELE 01: "Ikari, your possession of the embryo of Adam ensures

SEELE 01: "Ikari, 你持有亚当的胚胎，这确保了....."

the scenario to proceed as intended."

"确保场景按预期推进。"

Gendo's facial expression hadn't changed since the start to the conference, his jaw resting on his both of his hands, fingers interlocked.

"Yes, I am aware of that."

从会议开始到现在，Gendo 的表情始终如一，下巴倚在双手上，手指交缠。 "是的，我对此有所了解。"

SEELE 03: "You will act as the scenario describes. Report any possible disruption to us ASAP."

SEELE 03: "请严格按照剧本执行。一旦发现任何可能的干扰因素，请立即向我们汇报。"

SEELE 08: "How do you make sure that your son will act as planned, Ikari? From the psychological reports, he does not want to take responsibilities. He will run away when things happen to him.

SEELE 08: "碇，你如何保证你儿子会依照计划行动？根据心理报告，他并不愿意承担责任，一旦遇到问题，他很可能会选择逃避。

And it has already happened once, after the defeat of the 4th angel."

这种情况已经发生过一次，就在第四位天使战败之后。

Gendo: "I am planning to use the Second Child or Rei as an anchor. After all, the Second is expendable, and Rei can be replaced."

源堂: "我计划用第二适任者或绫波作为锚点。毕竟，第二适任者是可以牺牲的，绫波也可以被替换。"

SEELE 01: "You know what is going to happen when the scenario is

SEELE 01: "你清楚剧本上演时将会发生什么。"

threatened, Ikari." 威胁，碇。

"Well, would you look at that." Ritsuko said, glancing at the extensive damage that the ships had endured, "You guys certainly went all

哎呀，看看那儿。”律子边说边扫视着船只所承受的广泛损伤，“你们真是拼尽全力了。

out.”

“Why didn't we anticipate this? An Underwater Angel. We should've packed the C-Type Equipment, maybe then we would have stood a better chance.” Misato said, her arms stretching out, trying to relax a bit, “not that those kids didn't do a good job, but it was close.”

我们怎么没预料到这个？水下天使。我们应该带上 C 型装备，那样我们可能会有更好的机会。”美里说道，她的手臂伸展开来，试图放松一下，“并不是说那些孩子们做得不好，只是太惊险了。

“What's this?” Ritsuko asked, turning her head towards Misato. “I'll take that an apology from you, for nearly destroying an entire fleet.”  
这是什么？”律子转向美里问道，“我会把这看作是你对我们差点摧毁整个舰队的道歉。

“Shut it, Rits.” Misato replied.

“闭嘴，律子。”美里回应道。

“Speaking of the children,” Ritsuko said, flipping open a document, “you may want to look at this.”

“提到孩子们，”律子一边说，一边打开一份文件，“你们或许应该看看这个。”

Misato picked up the document, glancing over it, “so, emmm... wait, they achieved a combined sync ratio of 185%? How was that even possible?”  
美里拿起文件，快速扫视后，惊讶道：“那么，嗯……等等，他们居然达到了 185% 的同步率？这怎么可能呢？”

“It was because there were two minds. The sync ratio apparently stacked up. For Asuka, she reached a sync ratio of 95%. For Shinji, he managed to reach 90%.” Ritsuko said, “Before this, I thought having more than one person inside an entry plug would only lower the sync ratio, due to thought noise. Just like how Shinji's friends lowered his sync ratio during the battle against the 4th Angel. But for Asuka and Shinji, this was apparently not the case. Maybe I should start to work on the dual piloting system. This battle has provided so much useful data.”

这是因为有两个思维在共同作用。同步率显然得到了提升。对于明日香，她达到



了 95% 的同步率。而对于真嗣，他也成功达到了 90%。”律子解释道，“在此之前，我一直认为在一个插入栓内有多个人只会降低同步率，因为思维的干扰。就像真嗣的朋友们在与第四使徒战斗时降低了他同步率的情况一样。但明日香和真嗣的情况显然不同。或许我应该开始着手研究双人驾驶系统。这场战斗为我们提供了大量宝贵的数据。

"Great, but I can see there are much more in this report." Misato replied, "What is this... 'Unit 02 produced an AT-Field much stronger than anticipated.' Hell, I was wondering why the explosion didn't came out; it would have killed all of us. So it was Unit 02 that blocked the explosion." A small smile appearing on her face. 'Good job, kids. I owe you this one.'

"不错，不过这份报告里显然还有更多信息。" 美里回应说，“这是什么... '02 号机展现出的 AT 力场远超预期。' 天哪，我还在纳闷为什么没有发生爆炸；那本可能让我们全军覆没。原来是 02 号机阻止了爆炸。”她脸上浮现出一抹微笑。'孩子们，干得漂亮。这次我得感谢你们。'

"But Unit 02 was never supposed to produce such a strong AT-Field. And the kids' sync ratios were abnormally high, for both of them.

然而，02 号机原本不应产生如此强大的 AT 力场。此外，两名驾驶员的同步率都异常高。

Asuka was constantly hovering around 70s, Shinji 60s. They all achieved an abnormally high sync ratio this time. I don't know if it

明日香的同步率一直维持在 70% 左右，而真嗣则在 60% 左右。这次他们却都达到了异常高的同步率，我也不知道这是否正常。

was the effect of each other, or it was something else. Also, the strength of the AT-Field couldn't be explained just by the high sync

这是相互作用的结果，还是另有原因？而且，AT 力场的强度无法仅凭高同步率来解释。

ratio. It was almost like... there were two layers of AT-Fields."

比例问题。感觉就像.....存在两层 AT 力场。

"What do you mean by two layers of AT-Field? Could it be Unit 02 that produced them?" Misato asked, a feeling of dread appeared in her stomach. 'I do not have a good feeling about this.'

"你提到的两层 AT 力场是什么情况？难道是二号机造成的吗？" 美里询问道，内心升起一股不安。'我对这事儿感觉不太妙。'

"I don't know. Maybe it was a glitch of the software or something, or we haven't discovered all the abilities of EVAs." Ritsuko replied, her head running at full speed. 'Is this also a part of your scenario, Gendo?'

我不清楚。可能是软件出了点问题，或者我们尚未完全了解 EVA 的能力。” 律子回答说，她的思维正高速运转。“这也是你计划中的一部分吗，碇？

Toji and Kensuke were standing below the escalator, waiting for their friend. Kensuke still held his somehow still intact camera, hoping to catch few shots of the exotic girl. Asuka came down the escalator at first, she saw Kensuke holding his camera, then suddenly remembered something. 'I remembered these perverts taking photos of me during school days, I saw it in Shinji's memories. Now I have a perfect excuse to prevent that from happening.' Just as she was passing by Kensuke, she grabbed his camera by surprise, and threw it to Shinji. "Gimme that, geek stooge! You realize that what you have filmed is highly classified, right? Shinji, get his camera to Misato. We will give this back to you after we are clear of intelligence leakage."

真嗣和健介站在自动扶梯下，等待着他们的朋友。健介手中还握着那台奇迹般完好无损的相机，希望能捕捉到那位异国女孩的情影。明日香率先走下扶梯，看到健介拿着相机，突然间回忆涌上心头。“我想起了在学校时那些变态偷拍我的情景，这些记忆在真嗣的脑海中闪现。现在，我有了阻止这一切的绝佳理由。” 当她经过健介时，她出其不意地夺过相机，扔向真嗣。“拿来吧，书呆子跟班！你该知道你拍的东西属于高度机密吧？真嗣，把相机交给美里。等我们确认没有情报泄露后，自然会还给你。”

"Oh god..." Shinji had just started to come down the escalator, trying to cover himself with his arms as much as possible. He was still wearing Asuka's plugsuit.

"哦，天哪..." 真嗣刚踏上自动扶梯，尽可能用双臂遮挡自己。他依然穿着明日香的插入栓服。

"They match!" Toji cried out feeling remorse, thinking his friend has already fallen to the demon. Kensuke, on the other hand, was about to cry.

"Y-you can't do this to me! I had the entire battle filmed!" Kensuke was starting to agree with Toji that, although Asuka has

"他们匹配！" 真嗣悲痛地喊道，以为朋友已遭魔爪。健介则几乎要落泪，"你不能这样对我！我可是全程录下了战斗！" 健介逐渐认同真嗣的想法，尽管明日香已经

beautiful figures, she was really a demon.

她外表美丽，实则是个魔鬼。

'at least I don't have to worry about them taking those photos about Asuka anymore.' Sighing internally, Shinji walked past his friends, and handed the camera to a rolling-on-floor-laughing Misato. "Hahahaha, yes Shinji, hahahaha..."

'至少我不用再担心他们拍明日香的照片了。' 真嗣内心叹息，走过朋友们，将相机递给笑得前仰后合的美里。"哈哈，没错，真嗣，哈哈....."

'I'll never hear the end of it.' Shinji sighed heavily.

'这事我永远也听不完了。' 真嗣重重地叹了口气。

"Man, although she looks hot in her red suit, she's really a demon inside," Toji said, keeping a remorseful expression on his face, still remembering how Asuka had treated him the first day they met.

‘伙计，虽然她穿红色西装看起来很迷人，但内心真是个恶魔。’ 真嗣说道，脸上带着悔恨的表情，依然记得初次见面时明日香对他的恶劣态度。

"I agree, man, she took my camera away! I had everything filmed! What a bitch!" Kensuke said, with teary eyes, "I do feel sorry for you Shinji, you have to work with her every day."

我同意，哥们，她把我的相机拿走了！我本来都拍好了！真是个讨厌的家伙！" 健介眼含泪水说道，"真嗣，我真为你感到难过，你每天都得和她共事。

"It's so good that we'll never see her again." Sighing, both Toji and Kensuke turned around to the blackboard. Kensuke froze immediately, a deep frown on his face. Toji on the other hand, looked utterly shocked, his right index finger pointing forward.

"真是太好了，我们再也见不到她了。" 两人叹了口气，转身面向黑板。健介顿时僵住，眉头紧锁。而真嗣则一脸震惊，右手指向前方。

In the front of the classroom, Asuka had just finished writing down her name, she turned around, a smirk on her face. "I'm Asuka, 在教室前端，Asuka 刚写完自己的名字，便转过身，脸上露出一抹得意的微笑。  
"我是 Asuka。"

Asuka Langley Soryu. Charmed, Huh?"

"碇真嗣。真是魅力非凡，对吧？"

---

## Chapter 4: Always, Heart, Together

AN: I do not own Evangelion. Also keep expecting this upload frequency for a while. Things are gonna change, but overall it'll stick to the canon for now. More daily life scenes added. It seems like things for 3.0+ 1.0 are not that bad actually. Just wait. This chapter will be the last chapter that's canon-like. In the next chapter, bad things will happen. Stay tuned. Leave a Review!

作者注：我不拥有《新世纪福音战士》。请继续期待这样的更新频率一段时间。事情即将改变，但目前总体上仍会遵循原作设定。增加了更多日常生活场景。看来 3.0+1.0 的剧情实际上并不糟糕。只需等待。这一章将是最后一章类似原作的章节。在下一章，糟糕的事情将会发生。敬请期待。留下评论吧！

[ ] lines spoken in German ' ' character's thoughts

[ ] 德语台词 ' ' 角色内心独白

" " dialogues " " 对话

### Chapter 4: Always, Heart, Together

#### 第四章：永远，心，在一起

"Guys, ya know the new transfer student from Germany? She's hot!" "Yeah! Right! And she's only 13!"

"伙计们，你们知道从德国转学来的那个新生吗？她超正点！" "对啊！没错！而且她才 13 岁！"

"Bull shit! She's curvier than some of the senior hotties!"

"胡说八道！她比一些高年级的美女身材还要火辣！"

"I guess she came here to have a fresh start, after some hard break- ups in Germany?"

"我猜她是想来这里重新开始，毕竟在德国经历了一些痛苦的分手？"

"I'm totally gonna ask her out."

"我绝对要约她出去。"

"Shut up, you won't have a chance."

"闭嘴，你没机会的。"

"Hey, what do you mean?! Girls would fight to get to have a lunch with me!"

"嘿，你什么意思?! 女生们可是抢着要和我一起吃午饭的! "

"No offense, but ya know about the tallest guy in basketball team called Takuma? Yesterday he was already trying to grope a feel on her, and guess what? She freaking broke his fingers! Man I do feel sorry for him, since he'd probably be out of the rollout for a while."

"无意冒犯，但你听说过篮球队里那个最高的家伙高村吗？昨天他已经在试图对她动手动脚了，结果呢？她居然把他手指给掰断了！我真替他感到难过，估计他得缺席一阵子了。"

"Man you can't be serious!"

"老兄，你不是认真的吧! "

"Why would I lie? Her movement was fast as hell! Everyone who was in the hallway saw it! She pinned him on the floor in a blink of an eye!"

"我为什么要撒谎？她的动作快得要命！当时在走廊里的每个人都看到了！她一眨眼的功夫就把他按倒在地上了! "

"Holy shit man, isn't Takuma 6 feet tall or something? That girl looks barely 5 feet and a half!"

"我靠，兄弟，高村不是有六英尺高吗？这女孩看起来才五英尺半左右! "

"You wouldn't believe it unless you see it! I wouldn't be surprised if she was trained with martial arts or something! Oh shit, here she comes!"

"你不亲眼看到是不会相信的！她要是练过武术什么的，我一点也不会惊讶！哦，糟糕，她过来了! "

The boys' chatters stopped as soon as they saw Asuka walked into the school gate, keeping the smirk on her face. She looked around, finding Shinji not far away, pacing slowly. She grinned wider. "Hello Shinji! Guten Morgen!"

男孩们的议论声在看到明日香走进校门的那一刻戛然而止，她脸上挂着得意的微笑。她环顾四周，发现不远处的真嗣正慢慢踱步。她笑得更开了。"你好，真嗣！早上好! "

"Guten Morgen Asuka!" Shinji greeted back, turning back and smiling, "[How do you think about school?]"

"早上好，明日香! " 真嗣回以问候，转过身微笑着说，"[你觉得学校怎么样? ]"

Walking in front of Shinji, Asuka flicked his forehead lightly, "[School was... fine I guess. Anyways, I have already graduated from college.

走在真嗣前面的明日香轻轻弹了一下他的额头，"[学校嘛...还行吧。反正我已经大学毕业了。

If it's not for socializing purposes I wouldn't be here!]"

如果不是为了社交，我才不会来这里！]"

"[You've already graduated college? Wow, that's... impressive.]" Shinji said, trying to sound actually impressed, and was happy to see Asuka's smile grew wider, 'yes, boost her ego like that!'

"[你已经大学毕业了？哇，那真是.....令人印象深刻。]" 真嗣说道，努力让自己听起来真的感到惊讶，看到明日香笑容更灿烂，他心里暗喜，'对，就这样提升她的自信心！'

"[I've already got my master's degree at the University of Berlin. Heh, those college students looked at me like I'm a freak.]" Asuka said, shaking her head to try to wipe out certain unpleasant memories. 'No one talked to me. No one cared about me. Maybe they were scared? Pff, that was the past now.'

"[我已经在柏林大学获得了硕士学位。呵呵，那些大学生看我的眼神就像我是怪物一样。]" 明日香摇摇头，试图抹去某些不愉快的记忆。'没人跟我说话。没人关心我。也许他们害怕？呸，那都是过去的事了。'

"That's good to hear-err, no! That's not what I meant." Shinji's heart dropped when he saw Asuka's eyes twitched, "I-I-I was trying to say, "听到这个真好——呃，不！我不是那个意思。" 真嗣看到明日香的眼神一闪，心沉了下去，"我——我——我本想说，

emmm, you are brilliant!"

嗯，你真是太棒了！

"What else do you expect from me, Third Child? After all, I'm the great Asuka Langley Soryu." Asuka kept her cool composure, "So, where's the First Child, anyway?" Behind them, there were flocks of students. Most of the male students were showing jealous looks on their faces. They were envied that the socially-awkward, scrawny kid could hold a decent conversation with the redhead German. Some of the females showed remorseful looks since they felt threatened that this new transfer student

might take their cute and Elite-EVA-pilot away.

"你还能指望我什么呢，三号机驾驶员？毕竟，我是伟大的惣流·明日香·兰格雷。"明日香保持着冷静的姿态，"话说，初号机驾驶员在哪里？"在他们身后，是一群群的学生。大多数男学生脸上都露出了嫉妒的表情。他们羡慕这个社交笨拙、瘦弱的孩子能与那位红发的德国美女进行正常的对话。一些女生则流露出遗憾的表情，因为她们感到威胁，担心这位新转学生可能会夺走她们可爱且精英的 EVA 驾驶员。

"You mean Ayanami? She's right there. The girl with blue hair." Shinji replied, hoping things can work out better this time, "She's just... untalkative, don't get offended if she seems to ignore you. She doesn't really talk to anyone."

你是说绫波吗？她就在那里。那个蓝头发的女孩。"真嗣回答道，希望这次事情能有所好转，"她只是.....不太爱说话，如果她看起来在忽视你，请不要介意。她其实不太和任何人说话。

'Of course she doesn't; she's like an emotionless doll.' Asuka sighed internally, 'But I'll try to be nicer to her this time. After all, I have to thank that god-like Ayanami for sending me back here.' Walking down the stairs, Asuka didn't choose to stand atop Ayanami this time. Instead, she sat down next to her.

“当然不会，她就像个没有感情的玩偶。”明日香内心叹息，“但这次我会对她好一点。毕竟，我得感谢那位神一般的绫波把我送回这里。”走下楼梯，明日香这次没有选择站在绫波之上，而是坐到了她旁边。

"So, Hello, First Child! I'm Asuka, Asuka Langley Soryu. Let's be friends!" Asuka said, keeping a smile.

“那么，你好，第一适格者！我是明日香，惣流·明日香·兰格雷。让我们做朋友吧！”明日香说着，保持着微笑。

"Why?" Rei replied, her eyes still focused on the book.

“为什么？”绫波回答，目光依旧停留在书上。

"Because... because we are both pilots! Pilots look after each other in battles, right? Since I am the best pilot here, it's my duty to look after you and Baka-Shinji when we are fighting against the Angels."

"因为.....因为我们都是驾驶员！驾驶员在战斗中互相照顾，对吧？既然我是这里最优秀的驾驶员，那么在对抗使徒时照顾你和笨蛋真嗣就是我的责任。"

Asuka's words caused an explosive chattering around them.

明日香的话在他们周围引起了一阵喧哗。

"So she's an Eva pilot! No wonder she beat Takuma like flipping a coin!"

"原来她是 EVA 驾驶员！难怪她打败琢磨就像翻硬币一样轻松！"

"What does this girl not do? Man, I'm definitely asking her out"

"这女孩还有什么不会的？伙计，我绝对要约她出去。"

...

Ayanami blinked, 'Friends... pilots... look after each other? I remembered what Ikari-kun did to me. I felt... taken care of. It was not an unpleasant feeling. So, does this mean I am a friend to both Ikari-kun and Soryu-san?'

"Yes, Soryu-san. I think we can be friends."

绫波眨了眨眼，‘朋友...驾驶员...互相照顾？我想起了碇君为我做的事。我感觉...被照顾了。这不是一种不愉快的感觉。那么，这是否意味着我是碇君和惣流小姐的朋友呢？’ “是的，惣流小姐。我想我们可以成为朋友。”

Asuka blinked. She never thought Ayanami would respond this way. Not that she minded, tho. "Great!"

明日香眨了眨眼。她从未想过绫波会这样回应。不过她并不介意，“太好了！”

'Well, that went better than I anticipated.' Shinji smiled, 'But I remembered that Israfel is about to attack very soon. I'd better get ready.' Just at this moment, all three pilots felt their phones vibrating and ringing. 'It's Israfel,' Asuka and Shinji both thought, 'What am I going to do this time?'

“嗯，这比我想象的要顺利。”真嗣微笑道，“但我记得伊斯拉斐尔即将发动攻击。我最好准备一下。”就在这时，三位驾驶员都感觉到他们的手机在震动和响铃。“是伊斯拉斐尔，”明日香和真嗣都想到，“这次我该怎么办？”

"Shinji, you will be providing long-range fire support for Asuka! Asuka, you will engage the target in close quarters combat!"

“真嗣，你将为明日香提供远程火力支援！明日香，你将进行近距离战斗！”

"Hai!" They both said in unison, much to each other's surprise. 'These synchronized responses are getting on my nerves... But I haven't done the synchronization training this time, yet. How could he/she be so synced with me?' They both thought, Shinji prepared his rifle and aimed, and Asuka held on to her prog spear, "Watch carefully, Third! I will show you



what's called superior pilot skills!" 'Great, she's gonna screw it up again just like how I remembered,' Shinji sighed, "I'm ready whenever you are!" "嗨！" 他们异口同声地说道，彼此都感到惊讶。'这些同步反应真让人头疼.....但我这次还没进行同步训练呢，怎么可能和他/她这么同步？' 两人都这么想着，真嗣准备好了步枪并瞄准，而明日香紧握着她的长矛，"看好了，第三适格者！我要向你展示什么叫做顶尖的驾驶技术！" '唉，她又要搞砸了，就像我记忆中的那样，' 真嗣叹了口气，"我随时都准备好了！"

"Great! Now, three, two, one!" Asuka leaped into the air, and Shinji immediately started shooting, trying to distract the Angel. After a few jumps, Asuka finally got close enough to the target, and Shinji ceased firing just before Asuka was in his line of fire. "EEEEEEYYAAAAAHHH!" Asuka jumped high above the ground and made a battle cry, holding her prog spear, and slashed down onto the Angel. The angel made no resistance whatsoever and "太好了！现在，三，二，一！" 明日香一跃而起，真嗣立刻开始射击，试图分散使徒的注意力。经过几次跳跃，明日香终于接近了目标，真嗣在明日香进入他的射击线之前停止了射击。"呀——！" 明日香高高跃起，发出战斗的呐喊，手持长矛，猛地向使徒劈去。使徒毫无抵抗之力，

was cut in half promptly.  
瞬间被劈成了两半。

"Great work, Asuka!" Misato exclaimed in the comms, feeling proud  
"干得漂亮，明日香！" 美里在通讯中赞叹道，心中满是自豪。

of the girl. 对这位少女。

'Now it's time to get away!' Asuka thought, and she jumped back hundreds of meters away from the Angel. 'Wow, this time she actually managed to escape the danger instead of bragging about how great she was,' Shinji felt surprised, 'but it's still gonna be nearly impossible for us to win against Israfel without proper synchronization training.' Shinji stood there, watching as the Angel's body started to twitch.

"现在该撤退了！" 明日香心想，随即向后跃出数百米远离使徒。"哇，这次她真的成功逃脱了危险，而不是吹嘘自己有多厉害，" 真嗣感到惊讶，"但如果没有适当的同步训练，我们几乎不可能战胜伊斯拉斐尔。" 真嗣站在那里，注视着使徒的身体开始抽搐。

"The Angel's still alive!" Aoba yelled, "Pattern blue is not eliminated!" Everyone on the command deck watched in disbelief as the Angel regenerated and became two separate bodies. "Asuka, Shinji! The Angel's still alive! Be careful, cuz we don't know it-their abilities yet! Try not to make the Angel became three or more! Rits, what is MAGI telling us?" Misato shouted, and Ritsuko replied, "The MAGI is still processing the information and analyzing the samples! This is nothing like what we have encountered before! We need Asuka and Shinji to hold them off longer!" "天使还活着！" 青叶大喊，"蓝色模式未被消灭！" 指挥舱内的每个人都难以置信地看着天使再生并分裂成两个独立的身体。"明日香，真嗣！天使还活着！小心，因为我们还不了解它——它们的能力！尽量不要让天使变成三个或更多！律子，MAGI 有什么说法？" 美里喊道，而律子回答，"MAGI 仍在处理信息并分析样本！这与我们之前遇到的任何情况都不同！我们需要明日香和真嗣拖住它们更久！"

"Shinji, Asuka, just hold off the Angel for a little longer! We don't know what they are capable of!"

"真嗣，明日香，再拖住天使一会儿！我们还不清楚它们的能力！"

"Hai!" They both responded in unison again. Shinji dropped his rifle, pulled out his prog knife. 'The two parts of the Angel always act simultaneously, and they do not get away from each other. I can't fight both of them along. It took a week of synchronization training for me and Asuka to defeat it. I don't know how can we deal with them now. Maybe I could just ask Misato to drop an N2 mine, just like last time.' Holding off the Angels' attacks side by side with Asuka, Shinji thought about luring the Angel away from the land as far as possible and request an N2 strike. "嗨！" 他们俩再次异口同声地回应。真嗣放下步枪，拔出了他的程序刀。'天使的两个部分总是同时行动，它们从不分开。我和明日香花了整整一周的时间进行同步训练才击败了它。我不知道现在我们该如何对付它们。也许我可以请求美里像上次那样投放一枚 N2 地雷。' 与明日香并肩抵挡天使的攻击，真嗣考虑着尽可能将天使引离陆地，并请求进行 N2 打击。

"Asuka, I need you to work with me to get them away from the land!"

"明日香，我需要你和我一起把它们引离陆地！"

Asuka, on the other hand, was thinking about the same thing, 另一方面，明日香也在思考同样的问题，

'Maybe it is a good idea to just drop an N2 mine on them.' "Good idea, Third! Now let's get to work!" Both EVAs jumped high into the '也许直接在他们头上扔颗 N2 地雷是个好主意。' '好主意，三号！现在开始行动！' 两台 EVA 高高跃起，

sky, landing right behind the Angel. The Angel turned around and jumped towards the EVA units, the two parts acted in unison. Both EVA units raised their arms to block the attack but were sent flying backward. Although it looked messy, they had achieved their goal. "Misato, drop an N2 mine! We can't hold them much longer!" Shinji shouted into the comms. On the command deck, Misato heard the request, think about it with a frown on her face.

直落在使徒身后。使徒转身向 EVA 单位跳去，两者动作一致。两台 EVA 举起双臂阻挡攻击，却被击飞向后。虽然场面混乱，但他们达到了目的。'美里，投放 N2 地雷！我们撑不了多久了！' 真嗣对着通讯器喊道。指挥舰桥上，美里听到请求，皱着眉头思索起来。

'Maybe the kids have the point. We could use the time to create a plan. But the destruction of the landscape would cause me a tremendous amount of paperwork.' "Rits, what does MAGI suggest?" '或许孩子们说得对。我们可以利用这段时间制定计划。但地形破坏会给我带来大量文书工作。' '律子，MAGI 有什么建议？'

"The MAGI has achieved a conclusion: to hold off the Angel as long as possible. Thus, it accepted the proposal of an N2 strike." Ritsuko said, her fingers still typing furiously on her PC.

"MAGI 已经得出结论：尽可能拖延使徒。因此，它接受了 N2 爆雷的提议。" 律子说道，手指仍在电脑上飞速敲击。

"Great. Now, Asuka, Shinji! Get out of there! We are about to launch  
"很好。现在，明日香，真嗣！快离开那里！我们即将发射  
an N2 strike!" N2 爆雷！"

"At 11:10 AM, both EVA units had retreated, 1 minute later, the UN forces attacked the target by dropping an N2 mine." Maya continued, eyes still focusing on the computer.

"上午 11:10，两台 EVA 单位已撤退，1 分钟后，联合国部队通过投放 N2 地雷攻击了目标。" 真嗣继续说道，目光依旧集中在电脑上。

"You all know what this means, don't you?" Fuyutsuki said, "We'll have to completely redraw the map. Devise a new strategy."

"你们都知道这意味着什么，对吧？" 冬月说，"我们将不得不彻底重绘地图。制定新的战略。"

"The N2 mine successfully succeeded in burning off 28% of the Angel's structural substance."

"N2 地雷成功烧毁了使徒结构物质的 28%。"

Maya said as the feed showed the Angel's currently dormant form.

"玛雅说道，屏幕上显示着使徒当前休眠的形态。"

"So, I guess they are not dead?" Asuka asked, already knowing the answer.

"那么，我想它们还没死？" 明日香问道，其实她心里早已有了答案。

"No," Gendo said, his voice never had any tone in it, "It has simply

" "没有，" 碇源堂说道，他的声音始终毫无起伏，"它只是暂时....."

immobilized them. A second attack will only take a matter of time."

使他们动弹不得。第二次攻击只是时间问题。

"Well," Kaji said, twisting around slightly in his seat, "Look on the bright side, at least we have some time to regroup, you really can't ask for any more than that."

"好吧，" 加持在座位上稍微扭动了一下，"看开点，至少我们还有时间重新集结，你真的不能再要求更多了。"

"You two." Shinji and Asuka turned around to follow the voice, staring at the Commander of NERV, who was looking frustrated. "What do you think your job here at NERV is?"

"你们两个。" 真嗣和明日香转过身来，顺着声音望向 NERV 的指挥官，他看起来很沮丧。"你们认为自己在 NERV 的职责是什么？"

"To defeat the Angels." Asuka and Shinji both said, and turned their look to each other in surprise. 'This is really getting on my nerves,' Shinji thought, 'are we this synchronized even before the training? Not that I minded though.'

"为了击败使徒。" 明日香和真嗣异口同声地说，随即惊讶地对视了一眼。'这真是让人烦躁，' 真嗣心想，'我们甚至在训练前就这么同步了吗？不过我倒也不介意。'

As for Asuka, she thought about something else, 'Well this is certainly interesting. This Shinji is much more active. Maybe he would respond to my hints this time.'

至于明日香，她则在想别的事情，‘嗯，这确实有趣。这个真嗣比以前活跃多了。也许这次他会回应我的暗示。’

Gendo, satisfied with the answer, turned and stalked out of the room, the First Child followed the Commander obediently.

碓源堂对这个回答感到满意，转身大步走出了房间，第一适格者顺从地跟在指挥官身后。

"You two will work together, to defeat the Angel." Fuyutsuki said, leaving the room as well. As soon as the Sub-Commander was gone, the lights in the room returned, the main screen turning off. Asuka turned away from Shinji, "Well then Third Child, it seems like we have a lot of team building to do. Don't drag me back, understand?"

"你们两个将一起合作，击败使徒。" 冬月说道，随即也离开了房间。副司令一走，房间的灯光恢复了，主屏幕也随之关闭。明日香转身背对真嗣，"那么，第三适格者，看来我们有很多团队建设要做。别拖我后腿，明白吗？"

Shinji chuckled, 'Well, we'll see about that.' Thinking about how he would embarrass Asuka on the dancing mat since he had done it

真嗣轻笑一声，'好吧，走着瞧。'想到他曾在跳舞机上让明日香出糗的经历，他不禁感到有趣，"当然，明日香。"

before, he couldn't help but felt amused, "Sure thing, Asuka."

他忍不住笑了起来，"当然，明日香。"

Misato had just walked out of her office, still feeling a sense of dread about the mountain of paperwork presented on the table. She looked at the plan that Kaji gave her and sneezed. 'Why am I still thinking about this guy? It's so frustrating.' A familiar voice snapped her out of thought.

"Hello, Misato! I wonder where will I be living from now on?"

美里刚走出办公室，心中仍萦绕着桌上那堆文件带来的不安。她看着加持给她的计划书，打了个喷嚏。'我为什么还在想这家伙？真是烦人。'一个熟悉的声音打断了她的思绪。"你好，美里！我在想，从今往后我该住哪儿呢？"

Asuka asked in a questioning tone, having a smirk on her face.

明日香带着一丝戏谑的笑容，用疑问的语气问道。

"Well, hadn't Kaji tell you? You will be living with me now. All of your stuff will be transported to our apartment shortly." Misato replied, her face lightens up a bit.

"加持没告诉你吗？你现在要和我一起住了。你的东西很快就会被搬到我们的公寓去。" 美里回答道，脸上的表情稍微轻松了一些。

"Well, sounds good to me," Asuka replied, "although I would prefer to live with Kaji!"

"嗯，听起来不错，" 明日香回答道，"虽然我更愿意和加持住在一起！"

Misato snorted, "I don't know what you see in that stupid jerk! He's such a pig!"

美里哼了一声，"我不知道你看上他哪一点！那个蠢货！简直就是头猪！"

"Don't say that! Kaji's a really mannered gentleman! Anyway, I actually don't want all of my stuff to be put in your apartment. They are too much, and I've already known that you Japanese don't live in large houses."

Asuka smiled, "take me to the storage, I will choose

"别这么说！加持是个很有风度的绅士！再说，我也不想把我的东西全搬到你公寓里。太多了，而且我早就知道你们日本人不住大房子。" 明日香笑着说，"带我去储物间，我自己挑吧

which boxes that I like to keep!"

那些我喜欢的盒子！

Shinji walked into the school gate, wondering why he was still requested to finish the school day. As soon as he entered the classroom, he was surrounded by girls with promising looks.

真嗣走进学校大门，疑惑为什么还被要求完成这一天。他一进教室，就被一群眼神充满期待的女生围住了。

"Shinji-kun, what was fighting the Angel like? Was that scary?" "Shinji-kun, you have saved the city again! You are such a hero!"

"真嗣君，和使徒战斗是什么感觉？可怕吗？" "真嗣君，你又拯救了城市！你真是英雄！"

"Would you have lunch with me tomorrow, Shinji-kun? I've been looking forward to it for weeks!"

"明天能和我一起吃饭吗，真嗣君？我可是期待了好几个星期呢！"

"Just keep dreaming! Shinji-kun would never eat lunch with you!"

"继续做梦吧！真嗣君才不会和你一起吃午饭呢！"

...

Shinji felt the world was spinning around him - he had rarely been in the center of attention, much to his dislike. He shot a pleading look to Hikari, who immediately understood his mind and stood up, shouting, "OKAY! ENOUGH! EVERYBODY GO BACK INTO YOUR SEAT!"

真嗣感觉世界在他周围旋转——他很少成为关注的焦点，这让他很不自在。他向比智慧投去求助的目光，她立刻明白了他的心思，站起来大喊：“好了！够了！大家都回到自己的座位上去！”

Just as she finished, the bell rang and Sensei came in.

就在他刚说完，铃声响起，老师走了进来。

"Rise! Bow! Sit!" Hikari said after everyone came back to their seats.

“起立！鞠躬！坐下！”在大家回到座位后，光如此说道。

Shinji opened his laptop and entered a chat room.

真嗣打开笔记本电脑，进入了一个聊天室。

Chatroom 03: Guests: Hikari.H, LeBronJames, EVAUnit01, Shinji.I Shinji.I:

Thanks, Horaki-san.

聊天室 03: 嘉宾: 光.H, 勒布朗·詹姆斯, EVA 初号机, 真嗣.I 真嗣.I: 谢谢你, 洞木同学。

Hikari.H: No problem, Shinji-kun. If you feel uncomfortable with all the girls, I can tell them to stop harassing you.

光.H: 不用谢，真嗣君。如果你觉得被女生们困扰，我可以告诉她们别再骚扰你了。

Shinji.I: I'd appreciate that.

真嗣.I: 那太好了。

LebronJames: Wassup, Shin-man! Tell me, how did the fight go? Shinji.I: It didn't go well...

勒布朗·詹姆斯: 嘿，新-man! 告诉我，战斗怎么样了？真嗣.I: 不太顺利.....

Hikari.H: What? But we are back here, that means the Angel was defeated, right?

光.H: 什么? 但我们回来了, 这意味着天使被打败了, 对吧?

Shinji.I: well, you could say that for now, since it's dormant right now.

真嗣.I: 嗯, 你可以这么说, 因为现在它处于休眠状态。

EVAUnit01: God damn Shinji, I knew it was a big fight! I saw the blast! It was huge!

EVAUnit01: 该死的真嗣, 我就知道那是一场大战! 我看到了爆炸! 那威力巨大!

Shinji.I: WHAT!? You went out again? Do you know how dangerous it was? That N2 blast could have burnt your eyes permanently!

Shinji.I: 什么! ? 你又出去了? 你知道那有多危险吗? 那 N2 爆炸可能会永久烧伤你的眼睛!

EVAUnit01: relax, boy. I was prepared with special visors.

EVAUnit01: 放松点, 小子。我戴了特制的护目镜。

Shinji.I: You should really restrain yourself in the shelter the next time.

真嗣.I: 下次在避难所里你真的应该克制一下自己。

Hikari.H: By the way, Shinji-kun, what happened to Soryu-san? Shouldn't she come back with you? OMG, was she hurt?

光.H: 对了, 真嗣君, 惣流小姐怎么了? 她不应该和你一起回来吗? 天哪, 她受伤了吗?

Shinji.I: No, don't worry, she's perfectly fine. No one was hurt. I think

真嗣.I: 不, 别担心, 她完全没事。没有人受伤。我想

she might be packing up her stuff right now...

她可能正在打包她的东西.....

Shinji entered his apartment, fully expecting to see loads of boxes.

However, the room was relatively empty, much to his surprise.

真嗣走进他的公寓, 满心以为会看到一堆箱子。然而, 房间相对空旷, 这让他颇为惊讶。

Walking into the dining area, he was again surprised to see nothing unusual there. A chill ran down his spine. 'Oh no no no no no no... why aren't Asuka's things here? Isn't she's going to live with me? no No NO!' Breathing heavily and nervously, Shinji walked towards the bedroom that would have been Asuka's, and stopped in front of the door, hearing



rustling sounds coming out of the room.

走进用餐区，他再次惊讶地发现那里并无异样。一股寒意沿着他的脊背而下。'哦不不不不不不不.....为什么明日香的东西不在这里？她不是要和我一起住吗？不不不！'真嗣呼吸急促而紧张，走向本应是明日香的卧室，停在门前，听到房间里传来窸窣窸窣的声音。

Slowly, he knocked on the door.

他缓缓地敲了敲门。

"Who is it?" Hearing a familiar voice came behind the door, Shinji felt a big weight had been lifted from his heart. "Um, Asuka, is that you? Wha... what are you doing in my room?"

“是谁？”听到门后传来熟悉的声音，真嗣感到心头的大石终于落地。“呃，明日香，是你吗？你.....你在我房间里做什么？”

"Anta Baka?" Asuka slid the door open, her arms holding a neatly packaged blanket with Shinji's stuff in it, "I will be living here with Misato from now on! It's natural that she would want to live with a superior pilot! Don't you think?" Asuka handed the blanket to Shinji, "Here, take your stuff. Gah, you don't really possess many things, do you? I was fully expecting some romantic magazines..."

“你这个笨蛋？”明日香推开门，双手抱着一个整齐包装的毯子，里面装着真嗣的东西，“从现在开始，我要和美里住在一起了！她当然想和一个更优秀的驾驶员同住！你不觉得吗？”明日香把毯子递给真嗣，“给，拿好你的东西。啧，你也没多少东西嘛，我还以为会有什么浪漫杂志呢.....”

Shinji blushed, "Hey! What is that supposed to mean?" He took a deep breath, trying to calm down, "Wait, does this mean that I'm kicked out?" 'Well, I knew the answer already, but it would be fun to talk with her a bit.' "真嗣脸红了，”嘿！那是什么意思？”他深吸一口气，试图平静下来，”等等，这是不是意味着我要被赶出去了？”“好吧，我早就知道答案了，但和她聊聊还是挺有趣的。”

"Of course!" Asuka smirked, "What, are you having pervy thoughts about living with two hot young women?"

“当然！”明日香得意地笑了，“怎么，你是不是在幻想和两个火辣的年轻女人同居？”

"It's not that!" Shinji quickly rebutted, trying hard to hide his blush caused by the sight of Asuka's long, long legs which triggered some pleasant memories, "It's just that I don't want to live with my father, that's all!"

“不是那样的！”真嗣迅速反驳，努力掩饰因看到明日香那双长长的腿而引发的愉快回忆所导致的脸红，“只是我不想和我父亲住在一起，仅此而已！”

"How about Ayanami? I'm sure she's pretty hot as well..." Asuka

“那绫波呢？我敢说她肯定也很火辣.....”明日香

teased, "I saw the way you've looked at her sometimes..."

调侃道，“我见过你有时看她的眼神.....”

'It's because she's my half-sister' Shinji thought, 'but I couldn't let you know now.' 'Ah, errr, wait, you were looking at me? Well, I thought you were mannered enough to not peek at me!'

“因为她是我同父异母的妹妹”真嗣心想，“但现在不能让你知道。”“啊，呃，等等，你在看我吗？好吧，我以为你够有礼貌不会偷看我呢！”

Asuka choked by her saliva and coughing, 'Whoa, Shinji is pushing back? How interesting!' 'Cough cough... Don't -cough - get wrong - cough - wrong ideas, Third Child!' Asuka said, swallowing hard to free herself from choking, "You are my fellow pilot, it was my duty to keep an eye on you!" 明日香被口水呛到，咳嗽着说：‘哇，真嗣在反抗？真有意思！’‘咳咳.....别——咳——误会——咳——误会了，第三适格者！’明日香艰难地咽了咽口水，摆脱了呛咳，‘你是我同机的驾驶员，我有责任盯着你！’

"Ahem! Having enough marital quarrels? Let's get to work!" Misato suddenly appeared behind them, "and no, Shinji is not leaving. He will be living here with us!"

‘咳咳！吵够了吗？我们该工作了！’美里突然出现在他们身后，‘还有，真嗣不会离开。他会和我们一起住在这里！’

"What?!" Asuka cried, trying to sound angry, although she was feeling happy, "Girls and boys are not supposed to live under the same roof after the age of seven!" She intentionally left out the 'I'm not living with this pervert' part.

‘什么？！’明日香喊道，试图装出愤怒的样子，尽管她内心感到高兴，‘女孩子和男孩子过了七岁就不该住在同一个屋檐下！’她故意省略了‘我才不要和这个变态住在一起’的部分。

"Well, Shinji, Asuka!" Misato shouted, bringing the kids to silence as they turned to face her, "From now on you two will not just live together. You will eat together, sleep together, train together..."

“好了，真嗣，明日香！”美里大声喊道，让孩子们安静下来，他们转过身面对她，“从现在开始，你们俩不仅仅是住在一起。你们要一起吃饭，一起睡觉，一起训练.....”

Before letting either one of them interrupt, she bent over and came nearly nose length away from both of their faces. "And by the way," Her tone was now soft and mild, "That's an order."

在让他们中的任何一个打断之前，她弯下腰，几乎鼻子贴鼻子地靠近他们的脸。

“顺便说一句，”她的语气现在柔和而温和，“这是命令。”

After briefing the pilots about the plan, Misato gave them time to change their outfits, much to Shinji and Asuka's dismay. After Asuka had done changing, she came out of her room, just to find Shinji had already stood aside Misato. Upon seeing each other, both teens stood where they were and started to bite hard their lips. Misato saw what's coming, and decided to add some drama, "Well would you look at this," an evil grin appeared on her face, "people synchronize with each other starting from the outside."

在向驾驶员们简要介绍了计划后，美里给了他们时间更换衣服，这让真嗣和明日香感到沮丧。明日香换好衣服后，走出房间，却发现真嗣已经站在美里旁边。看到对方后，两个少年站在原地，开始用力咬住嘴唇。美里看到了即将发生的事情，决定增加一些戏剧性，“好吧，看看这个，”她脸上露出了邪恶的笑容，“人们从外表开始同步。”

Shinji couldn't help but started giggling. Seeing this, Asuka couldn't help but started giggling. 真嗣忍不住开始咯咯笑起来。看到这一幕，明日香也忍不住了

hold it longer. The giggling soon became rolling-on-floor laughs. 笑声很快变成了满地打滚的大笑。

Shinji's left hand was pressing down his stomach, right hand pointing at Asuka, his whole body vibrating. Asuka, on the other hand, was laughing so hard that she began to experience oxygen deprivation.

真嗣的左手按着肚子，右手指向明日香，全身都在颤抖。而明日香则笑得太过厉害，开始感到缺氧。

Looking at this adorable scene, Misato thought, 'these kids are so cute when they are like this. Maybe I should push them together or something. They are probably the only ones that could possibly  
"看着这可爱的场景，美里心想，'这些孩子这样子真是太可爱了。也许我该撮合他们一下。他们大概是唯一能真正'

understand each other.' 理解彼此的人吧。 '

Later that evening, Shinji went to the grocery store and bought some ingredients for German food. 'Asuka hated Japanese food, at least during the period when she just arrived.' Shinji decided to make some Schnitzel with some scrambled eggs. He was determined to impress Asuka for her first dinner at their apartment with his cooking. He felt like singing and dancing. So he did.

那天傍晚，真嗣去了杂货店，买了些做德国菜的食材。'明日香讨厌日本食物，至少在她刚来的时候是这样。'真嗣决定做些炸肉排配炒蛋。他决心用他的厨艺在她的首次公寓晚餐上给她留下深刻印象。他感觉自己想唱歌跳舞。于是他就这么做了。

"~ fly me to the moon~ ~ hmmm~ hmmm~ in other words, I lov WHOA!" Shinji had just opened the door, and his face almost crashed into Misato's chest.

"~ 带我飞向月球 ~ ~ 嗯~ 嗯~ 换句话说，我爱谁啊！" 真嗣刚打开门，脸差点撞上美里姐的胸口。

"What's so happy about, Shin-chan?" Misato said in a teasing tone, "you love what? I know Asuka-chan is attractive and all that..." She finished with a knowing look and a raise of eyebrows.

"什么事这么开心啊，真酱？" 美里用调侃的语气说道，"你爱什么？我知道明日香很迷人啦....." 她带着一副了然的神情，挑了挑眉毛。

'oh shit shit shit shit shit' Although Shinji was quite used to Misato's teasing, the lack of practice due to him and Asuka actually went together had rendered him speechless and blushing furiously this time. "I... I was just singing! Nothing that I love! Oh wait, that doesn't sound like what I meant... of course I errr, I care about you, Misato- san! You are, emmm, like a mo-mother to me..." He almost lost his composure when he remembered how Misato had died trying to get him into Unit01.

'哦糟糕糟糕糟糕糟糕糟糕' 虽然真嗣对美里的调侃已经习以为常，但由于他和明

日香真的在一起后缺乏练习，这次他哑口无言，满脸通红。"我...我只是在唱歌！没有什么我爱的事物！哦等等，那听起来不像是我本意...当然我呢，我关心你，美里小姐！你就像是，嗯，像我的妈妈一样..."他几乎要失去镇定，当他想起美里为了让他进入初号机而牺牲的那一刻。

Misato was in shock. She totally didn't expect this. 'This kid's got such a good heart,' she thought, 'I don't think I deserve to be called a mother by you, Shinji. At least not yet.' "Shinji, that was very kind of

"美里震惊了。她完全没想到这一点。'这孩子心地真善良，'她想，'我觉得自己还不配被你称为母亲，真嗣。至少现在还不行。' "真嗣，你真是太好了"

you. Thanks." 谢谢你。

Asuka was watching TV after Misato gave them the music that they need to remember. She was wearing a casual yellow t-shirt and blue short shorts. She then smelled something familiar. 'It smells like Baka-Shinji is cooking Schnitzer. But how does this Shinji know that I like it? Maybe he just thinks that I'm from German so I must like German food.' Satisfied with the reasoning, she stood up and walked towards her room. She wanted to take a shower before dinner.

美里给了他们需要记住的音乐后，明日香正在看电视。她穿着一件休闲的黄色T恤和蓝色短裤。然后她闻到了一股熟悉的味道。'闻起来像是笨蛋真嗣在做施尼茨尔。但这个真嗣是怎么知道我喜欢它的？也许他只是认为我是德国人，所以一定喜欢德国菜。'对这个推理感到满意，她站起来走向自己的房间。她想在晚餐前洗个澡。

Asuka entered the bathroom, took off her clothes, and lied in the bathtub filled with hot water. She felt so comfortable just lying there. She then wanted to get some Shampoo and wash her hair, so she just reached out her hand to the position where she remembered the Shampoo should be, just to grab on something very hairy and soft.

明日香走进浴室，脱下衣服，躺进了装满热水的浴缸里。她感到非常舒适，只是躺在那里。接着，她想拿些洗发水洗头发，于是伸手去她记得应该放洗发水的地方，却抓到了一个毛茸茸且柔软的东西。

"WARK!" peck. "哇！" 啄了一下。

"OUCH!" Asuka cried, immediately withdrew her arm, and found a red mark on her hand. "[Stupid Penguin!]" Asuka cursed in German and stood

up. She had to find the shampoo after all. Just as she was about to step out of the bathtub, she heard the door of the bathroom slide open, Shinji's concerned voice came after-

"哎哟！" 明日香惊叫一声，立刻缩回手臂，发现手上有一道红印。"[笨蛋企鹅！]" 明日香用德语咒骂着，站了起来。她毕竟还是得找到洗发水。正当她准备跨出浴缸时，听到浴室门滑开的声音，紧接着传来了真嗣关切的声音——

"Asuka are you alright-AHHHH!" Shinji immediately closed the door, blushing furiously. 'Although it's not something I haven't seen yet, but it's still embarrassing to her! I hope she doesn't hate me for this!' "I'm sorry! I didn't mean to-"

"Asuka，你还好吗——啊啊啊！" 真嗣立刻关上门，脸红得像熟透的苹果。'虽然不是第一次看到，但对她来说还是太尴尬了！希望她不会因此讨厌我！' "对不起！我不是故意的-"

Asuka was also blushing in the bathroom. Everything happened so fast she wasn't able to process all the information. After a few seconds, as the realization finally came down to her, the whole building started to shake like an earthquake.

在浴室里的明日香也满脸通红。一切发生得太快，她还没来得及处理所有信息。几秒钟后，当她终于意识到发生了什么时，整个建筑开始像地震一样摇晃起来。

" B A K A-SH INJ II ! "

"笨蛋真嗣！"

The next morning, Misato woke up the kids at precisely 6 am. It was supposed to be the first day of their actual dancing session. The kids  
次日清晨，美里在早上 6 点整准时叫醒了孩子们。这本应是他们正式舞蹈训练的第一天。孩子们

got up and dressed, still embarrassed to look at each other in the  
起床更衣，依旧尴尬地不敢直视对方的

eyes. Misato quickly set up the dancing mat. After eating breakfast, she instructed the children on how to use the mat.

眼睛。美里迅速铺好了跳舞垫。早餐后，她指导孩子们如何使用这个垫子。

"... and that's how you get sync scores. Remember, both of you need to get 100 percent to have a chance to defeat the Angel. Now let's try this. Asuka, go to the left mat. Shinji, you'll have the right.

“...这就是如何获得同步率分数的方法。记住，你们俩都需要达到 100%才有可能击败使徒。现在让我们试试。明日香，去左边的垫子。真嗣，你用右边的。”

Okay. Both of you, put on your headset. Okay. Ready? Three, two, one!"

“好的。你们俩，戴上耳机。好了。准备好了吗？三，二，一！”

As the familiar rhythm sounded, they both started dancing under reflex and muscle memory. Both of them weren't expecting anything from the first try. Asuka was totally indifferent. Shinji, on the other hand, was expecting to embarrass Asuka. He thought this Asuka hadn't done this before, so he had an unfair advantage. However, both of them soon found themselves wrong.

随着熟悉的节奏响起，他们俩都本能地开始跳舞，依靠的是肌肉记忆。两人都没对第一次尝试抱有期望。明日香完全无所谓。而真嗣则期待着能让明日香出丑。他认为这个明日香之前没做过这个，所以他有不公平的优势。然而，很快他们俩都发现自己错了。

'How is this possible? Why are we so perfectly in sync with each other? She/He shouldn't have done anything like this before!' After the final beat, the scoreboard showed a 95% sync score.

“这怎么可能？我们为何如此完美同步？她/他之前不应该做过类似的事情！”最后一拍落下，计分板上显示出了 95% 的同步率。

Misato didn't know what to say. She hadn't seen anyone act so perfectly in sync with another before. Their movements were impeccable and in sync. It was almost like... they were trained to do this. No. They were born to do this.

美里不知该说什么。她从未见过有人能与他人如此完美同步。他们的动作无可挑剔，完全同步。这几乎像是.....他们被训练过这样做。不。他们是天生为此而生。

The pilots looked at each other, also in utter disbelief. The silence lasted about ten seconds, before Misato finally spoke up, "Well, that was... quite impressive. Keep up the work. I don't think you guys will need much effort to accomplish our goal, considering this is your first time doing it."

驾驶员们面面相觑，同样难以置信。沉默持续了大约十秒，美里终于开口道：

“嗯，那真是.....相当令人印象深刻。继续保持。考虑到这是你们第一次做，我想你们达成目标不会太费力。”

Asuka put up her composure the next, "Well, what do you expect from the Great Asuka Langley Soryu? I bet if it was not Baka Shinji there who performed several wrong steps, we could have managed 100 percent already!"

明日香维持着她的镇定，接着说：“哼，你还能指望伟大的惣流·明日香·兰格雷有什么表现？我敢打赌，如果不是笨蛋真嗣在那里犯了好几个错误，我们早就能达到百分之百了！”

Shinji chuckled. For sure he totally hadn't expected this. But he told himself that in his world, it was only because Asuka was the one 真嗣轻声笑了。他确实完全没预料到这种情况。但他告诉自己，在这个世界里，只是因为明日香是那个

constantly breaking the sync by moving too fast. Satisfied with his explanation, he said, "Well Asuka, I..emm, maybe you should slow down a bit? It will be easier for me to catch up."

总是因为动作太快而打乱同步的人。对自己的解释感到满意后，他说：“嗯，明日香，我……呃，也许你应该稍微放慢一点？这样我更容易跟上。”

Asuka grinned, feeling her ego boosted. "Sure thing, Third Child. 明日香咧嘴一笑，感觉自信心倍增。“当然，第三适格者。”

Just don't make any stupid mistakes!"  
“只是别犯蠢就行了！”

It was three days after they had started their sync training. Their 这是他们开始同步训练后的第三天。他们的  
friends were starting to worry about them.  
朋友们开始担心他们了。

"Hey Ken, haven't seen Shin-man and the Red Devil for three days. What do ya think theyr doin'?" Toji asked, sitting on his desk, his eyes looking at the empty seat of Shinji, legs swinging in the air.  
“嘿，健，三天没见到真嗣和红魔了。你觉得他们在搞什么鬼？”冬二坐在桌子上，眼睛盯着真嗣空荡荡的座位，双腿在空中晃荡。

"I dont know man, theyve must be doing some NERV business. I mean, they are both pilots, after all." Kensuke said, still mad about how his camera was taken by the Red Devil.



"我不知道，伙计，他们肯定是在忙 NERV 的事。我是说，他们毕竟都是驾驶员。" 健介说，仍然对红魔拿走他的相机感到恼火。

"I say we go check on him today after school. Maybe the demon had put a spell on him or something. I need to make sure hes safe!"

"我说我们今天放学后去看看他吧。也许那恶魔对他施了什么咒语。我得确保他安全！"

"Okay man, Ill come with ya."

"好吧，兄弟，我跟你一起去。"

Hikari was worried about Asuka. Not only about the fact that she hadn't shown up in the school for three days but also the schoolwork she's missing was building up. For sure that Asuka had told her about how she had already graduated college and attending middle school just to socialize, but as the class rep she had to maintain a sense of formality. So she decided to deliver Asuka's schoolwork to her apartment in person.

光担心明日香。不仅因为她已经三天没来学校了，她错过的功课也在不断累积。虽然明日香告诉过她，自己已经大学毕业，上中学只是为了社交，但作为班长，她必须保持一定的正式态度。因此，她决定亲自将明日香的作业送到她的公寓。

The bell rang, and she immediately packed up her stuff and began walking towards the address that Asuka had given her. She reached the apartment building, walked inside the elevator, pressed the floor, and waited. The door opened, she exited the elevator, just to find the 铃声响起，她立刻收拾好东西，开始向明日香给她的地址走去。她到达公寓楼，走进电梯，按下楼层，然后等待。电梯门打开，她走出电梯，却发现

other two stooges were already standing in the hallway.

另外两个家伙已经站在走廊里了。

"Hello, Toji. Hello, Kensuke." She greeted.

"你好，冬二。你好，真嗣。" 她打招呼道。

"Hi, class rep./Hell, Horaki-san." The stooges greeted back, "Whatcha doin here, class rep? What wind had blown you here?" Toji asked.

"嗨，班长。/地狱，班长。" 跟班们回道，"班长你来这儿干嘛？什么风把你吹来了？" 冬二问道。

Hikari smiled, "I'm here to deliver the school work Soryu-san was missing. What about you guys?"

光微笑着说：“我来送绫波同学缺的作业。你们呢？”

Toji tried to hide his blush, "We are here to check on Shin-man. Missed three days of school. We are worried about him."

冬二试图掩饰自己的脸红，“我们是来看望真嗣的。他缺了三天课。我们担心他。”

They started walking towards the Katsuragi residence, just to find them stopped in front of the same door.

他们开始向桂木家走去，却发现自己在同一扇门前停了下来。

"Why had you stopped, class rep? I thought u were visiting the Red Devil." Toji asked, looking confused.

“你为什么停下来，班长？我以为你要去拜访赤鬼。”户次问道，看起来很困惑。

"Well, this is the address Soryu-san gave me. I was wondering the same thing." Hikari said, looking more confused.

“嗯，这是索留香同学给我的地址。我也在想同样的问题。”光莉说，看起来更加困惑。

"This is definitely the apartment Shinji lives in, we came here last time!" Kensuke added, sounding very confused. Suddenly, a shocking realization came down on them.

"这肯定是碇真嗣住的公寓，我们上次来过这里！"真希助听起来非常困惑。突然，一个令人震惊的领悟降临在他们身上。

"you don't mean..." Hikari said in a horrified tone.

"你不是想说....."光莉用一种惊恐的语气说道。

"You can't be serious..." Toji swallowed hard, "well, better ring the bell first..."

"你不会是认真的吧....."冬二艰难地咽了口唾沫，“嗯，还是先按门铃吧.....”

All three of them reached out their index fingers and pressed on the doorbell.

他们三人同时伸出食指，按下了门铃。

"Coming!" Was the voice came behind the door. A few seconds later, the door hissed open.

“来了！” 门后传来声音。几秒钟后，门嘶的一声打开了。

Just to show Asuka leaning on Shinji's back, her head peeking out on top of Shinji's, and they were wearing the exposing and  
只是为了展示明日香靠在真嗣背上，她的头从真嗣头顶探出，他们穿着暴露且  
suggesting outfit. 建议着装。

Both Toji and Kensuke couldn't believe what they saw, trying to use their arms to hide their faces. They backed off a step, remorse and disbelief were their expression.

看到这一幕，东治和真嗣简直不敢相信自己的眼睛，他们试图用手遮住脸。两人后退了一步，脸上流露出悔恨和不解。

"You... betrayed us..." Kensuke said, feeling disgusted. "Disgusting..." Toji said, still not blinking, "Are you... and her..." "No!" They both shouted in unison, face reddened, "It's not like that!"

“你...背叛了我们...” 真嗣说道，感到恶心。“恶心...” 东治仍然瞪大眼睛，  
“你...和她...” “不是那样的！” 他们异口同声地喊道，脸涨得通红，“事情不是你们想的那样！”

Hikari buried her face in her hands, shaking her head violently. "Then what is it like?"

光埋首于双手之间，猛烈地摇着头。“那它是怎样的？”

"Misato said people know each other starting from the outside! This is our training!" In sync. "We have to train together, eat together, sleep..." They both stopped at the exact same word, realizing what that word would imply.

“美里说过，人们是从外表开始了解彼此的！这是我们的训练！” 同步一致。  
“我们必须一起训练，一起吃饭，一起睡觉.....” 他们同时在一个词上停了下来，意识到这个词会暗示什么。

Hikari, upon hearing that word, turned from embarrassment to rage. "You... you... this is so dirty! Sleeping together? Oh My GOD! You are living in SIN!"

光听到那个词后，从尴尬转为愤怒。“你.....你.....这太肮脏了！一起睡觉？哦，我的天哪！你们这是在犯罪！”

"What is it, kids?" Misato arrived, asking.

“怎么了，孩子们？”美里赶到，问道。

"Could you please explain what's going on here?" Hikari requested,

“你能解释一下这里发生了什么吗？”光请求道，

her face blushing furiously.

她的脸涨得通红。

Ten minutes later, after a detailed explanation, the classmates laughed in relief. "So that's why they are like this... I wonder how well they are

doing?" Hikari said, feeling sorry for jumping to a conclusion too quickly.

十分钟后，经过一番详细解释，同学们松了口气地笑了起来。“原来他们是这样……不知道他们现在过得怎么样？”光子说道，为自己过早下结论感到抱歉。

"Take a look by yourself." Misato emptied another can.

“你自己看看吧。”美里又开了一罐。

After watching their dance for a while, the boys and the class rep were amazed by the total synchronization of Asuka and Shinji's

观看了一会儿他们的舞蹈后，男生们和班长都被明日香和真嗣的完全同步所震撼。

movements. 动作。

DU! The music stopped, and the scoreboard showing a 100 percent

DU! 音乐戛然而止，计分板上显示着 100%的同步率

sync score. 同步得分。

"Wow, that was great! Comon Shinji, get us something to drink." Asuka was breathing heavily, wiping out sweat off her forehead.

“哇，太棒了！来吧，真嗣，给我们弄点喝的。”明日香喘着粗气，擦去额头上的汗水。

"Jawohl Mein fü hrer" Shinji mocked, quickly running away from some potential unpleasant physical contact.

“遵命，我的领袖”真嗣嘲讽道，迅速跑开以避免可能的不愉快身体接触。

"Hmpf, I'll deal with u later, Third Child!" Asuka shouted, but grinning a little, "Baka."

“哼，我待会儿再收拾你，第三适格者！”明日香喊道，但嘴角微微上扬，“笨蛋。”

"Well, it seems like they are doing a pretty decent job." Hikari smiled,

"How much training did it take to get them to this level?"

"嗯，看起来他们做得相当不错。" 光微笑道，"他们达到这个水平花了多少训练时间？"

"Well, not much, since they achieved a 95 percent on their first try,"

Misato replied plainly.

"其实不多，因为他们第一次尝试就达到了 95 分，" 美里平淡地回答。

"Miss Misato, may I try it with Toji?" Kensuke said with a pleading eye, apparently, he was interested in everything that's EVA related.

"美里小姐，我可以和真嗣试试吗？" 健介用恳求的眼神说，显然，他对一切与 EVA 相关的事物都很感兴趣。

"Emmm, since our pilots are doing a great job, I think yeah, I can let you try it." Misato agreed, and Kensuke just jumped out of his seat, "COOL! Thank you, Captain! Comon, Toji! We gotta try what the pilots do!" 'Maybe If I perform well on this thing, NERV may actually consider me as a potential pilot.' Toji reluctantly stood up, "Aye, aye, don't know why ya so obsessed with these."

"嗯，既然我们的驾驶员表现出色，我想可以让你试试。" 美里同意了，健介立刻从座位上跳起来，"酷！谢谢队长！快，总司！我们得试试驾驶员们做的事！'如果我在东西上表现好，NERV 可能会真的考虑我作为潜在驾驶员。' 总司不情愿地站起来，"好啦，好啦，不知道你为什么对这些这么着迷。"

The boys got onto their respective mats, put on the headsets, and waited for the music to start. "Okay guys, three, two, one!"

男孩们各自站上垫子，戴上耳机，等待音乐开始。"好了，伙计们，三，二，一！"

"DU! Di, Di, Di, DU! Di, DU! DU! Buzzzzz-" Within 8 steps, the music stopped and a big "ERROR" appeared on the scoreboard.

"嘟！嘀，嘀，嘀，嘟！嘀，嘟！嘟！嗡嗡嗡-" 只走了 8 步，音乐就停止了，计分板上出现了一个大大的"错误"。

"Hehehehe" Hikari giggled, "you two can't even make it to the end of prelude!"

"呵呵呵呵" 光笑道, "你们俩连序章都撑不到! "

"This is so stupid!" Toji exclaimed, "I'm not doing this anymore!"

"这太蠢了! " 冬二大声说道, "我再也不玩了! "

"Ye, I agree this is hard," Kensuke said, his voice down. Maybe it is

"嗯, 我同意这很难, " 真嗣低声说, "也许真是这样。"

not easy to be an EVA pilot after all.

成为 EVA 驾驶员毕竟不是件容易的事。

Asuka watched the whole scene, a prideful expression on her face, "Well, accept the reality, stooges. It's not like anyone can just become an EVA pilot without effort or talent! And obviously, while Shinji has the talent..."

She intentionally cut off her sentence, waiting for someone to continue.

明日香看着整个场景, 脸上带着自豪的表情, "好吧, 接受现实吧, 傻瓜们。不是随便谁都能不费吹灰之力或天赋就成为 EVA 驾驶员的! 显然, 虽然真嗣有天赋....." 她故意停下句子, 等待有人接话。

"Your parents bribed NERV?" Toji mocked.

"你父母贿赂了 NERV? " 冬二嘲讽道。

"You're the Commander's pet?" Kensuke followed.

"你是司令的宠物吗? " 真希跟着问道。

Asuka's face quickly became clouded, and shot a death glare to Toji and Kensuke, "Meh, I should have known that I could expect NOTHING from those monkey heads of yours!"

明日香的脸色迅速阴沉下来, 向真治和真希投去死亡凝视, "哼, 我早该知道, 从你们那猴脑子里别指望能得到什么! "

Just as a big fight was about to start, Shinji came back from the kitchen swiftly with empty hands and realized that the powder keg was about to explode. He quickly walked in front of Asuka, blocking her sight to the stooges, "Asuka, there's no more drinks in the fridge except Misato's beers!"

就在一场大战一触即发之际, 真嗣从厨房迅速返回, 两手空空, 意识到火药桶即将引爆。他迅速走到明日香面前, 挡住她对那两人的视线, "明日香, 冰箱里除了美里小姐的啤酒, 已经没有饮料了! "

Asuka calmed down a bit, and saw this as a perfect excuse to escape from the fight, "Well then, Shinji, come with me! We are going to buy some drinks from the stores." She grabbed Shinji's wrist and dragged him along the way. Shinji shot an irritated glare to Toji and Kensuke, his eyes saying "Look at what u guys got me into!" Toji and Kensuke were looking at Shinji with sympathetic eyes but made

明日香稍微冷静了一些，便趁机找个借口逃离这场争执，“那么，真嗣，跟我来！我们要去商店买些饮料。”她抓住真嗣的手腕，拉着他一起走。真嗣向东治和健介投去一个恼怒的眼神，仿佛在说：“看看你们把我卷进了什么麻烦！”东治和健介同情地看着真嗣，但显然

it clear that there was nothing they could do to help him.  
他们也无能为力。

To Shinji's surprise, Asuka was not being very hostile to him even  
令真嗣惊讶的是，明日香对他并不十分敌对，甚至

though she was in a bad mood. In the grocery store, Asuka picked up some drinks and snacks that she liked, and Shinji actively paid for them. They don't really have any other places to spend their salary.

尽管她心情不佳。在杂货店里，明日香挑选了一些她喜欢的饮料和零食，而真嗣则积极地为他们买单。他们其实并没有太多其他地方可以花掉自己的薪水。

On their way back, they found the bench, and they both sat on it. There was a comfortable silence between them as they watched the  
在回去的路上，他们找到了那张长椅，两人都坐了下来。他们之间弥漫着一种舒适的沉默，一边看着夕阳，一边喝着汽水，吃着零食。

sunset, drank the sodas, and ate the snacks. Asuka spoke up the first after she finished her snack, "Shinji, tell me, why would you pilot the EVA?"  
夕阳西下，喝着汽水，吃着零食。明日香吃完零食后第一个开口问道：“真嗣，告诉我，你为什么要驾驶 EVA？”

Shinji was taken aback by the sudden question, "Errr, I thought that I wanted to pilot the EVA for my father's attention. He left me alone 10 years ago, and disappeared from my life. I couldn't understand why he just left me. So maybe I am piloting the EVA so he could pay more attention to me. But now, I think I want to pilot the EVA for the others. You know, to protect the people that you care."

真嗣被这突如其来的问题吓了一跳，"呃，我以为我想驾驶 EVA 是为了引起父亲的注意。他十年前就抛下我独自离开，从我的生活中消失了。我不明白他为什么就这样离开我。所以也许我驾驶 EVA 是为了让他更多地关注我。但现在，我想我驾驶 EVA 是为了其他人。你知道的，为了保护那些你在乎的人。"

Asuka thought about his response for a while, 'Pretty close to the Shinji in my world.' Then she said, "Well, for me I piloted EVA for other's praise. Because I was afraid that no one would want me, no one would look at me if I was not the best." 'Now tho, I know that whatever happens, you will look at me.' Asuka smiled faintly, "But now I think I pilot EVA for myself. I want me to be able to sincerely praise myself." 'I don't care about how others think about me anymore since I know you wouldn't leave me alone. And that's enough for me.'

明日香对他的回答思考了一会儿，'跟我那个世界的真嗣挺接近的。'然后她说，"对我来说，我驾驶 EVA 是为了别人的赞扬。因为我害怕如果我不是最好的，就没有人会想要我，没有人会看我。" '但现在，我知道无论发生什么，你都会看着我。'明日香微微一笑，"但现在我想我驾驶 EVA 是为了我自己。我希望我能真诚地赞美自己。" '我不再在乎别人怎么看待我了，因为我知道你不会抛下我一个人。这对我来说已经足够了。'

'Wow, Asuka had grown up a bit, almost to the same level as the Asuka in my world,' Shinji thought, surprised. They finished their  
'哇，明日香成长了不少，几乎和我那个世界的明日香一样了，'真嗣惊讶地想。他们完成了他们的

snacks and headed back to the apartment.  
买了零食，返回公寓。

It was the last night before the battle. After the final practice with a 100 percent score, Asuka and Shinji went to do their respective things. Asuka went to take a shower, and Shinji sat on his futon reading manga and listening to his SDAT. 'If she says something about the wall of Jericho again, I have to take action this time,' Shinji thought nervously, 'maybe I could just ask her what she needs, that's all.'

这是大战前的最后一夜。在最后一次训练以满分结束后，明日香和真嗣各自忙自己的事。明日香去洗澡，而真嗣坐在他的被褥上读漫画，听着他的 SDAT。'如果她再提耶利哥之墙的事，这次我必须采取行动，'真嗣紧张地想，'也许我可以直接问她需要什么，就这样。'



Asuka came out of the shower, her body wrapped in a large white towel. "So, Misato isn't gonna be here tonight?" She asked in a teasing tone. 明日香洗完澡出来，身上裹着一条大白毛巾。"美里今晚不在这儿吗？"她用一种戏谑的语气。

"Ah, yes" Shinji replied, not really paying much attention since he was immersed in his own thoughts.

“啊，是的。”真嗣回答道，并没有真正注意，因为他沉浸在自己的思绪中。

"Then, there will only be two of us here tonight!" Asuka walked into the living room, picked up her futon, and put it down in her bedroom. 'Maybe this time Shinji would actually get my hints,' She thought. "This is the impenetrable wall of Jericho," Asuka half-intentionally exposed her chest by leaning forward, her tone was ever so slightly hostile, "Cross it, you die. Do you understand?"

“那么，今晚这里就只有我们两个人了！”明日香走进客厅，拿起她的被褥，放在卧室里。‘也许这次真嗣会真正理解我的暗示，’她想。“这是不可逾越的耶利哥之墙，”明日香半有意地俯身露出胸部，语气略带挑衅，“越过它，你就死定了。明白吗？”

"Ah, yeah, sure" Shinji replied, his eyes tho couldn't help but peeking at Asuka's body.

“啊，嗯，当然”真嗣回答道，尽管他的目光忍不住偷偷瞟向明日香的身姿。

Asuka huffed and shut the door close. Shinji stood up, got himself a drink from the fridge, and waited for several minutes. Just as Asuka was about to give up and go to sleep, Shinji got up and knocked on Asuka's door. 明日香哼了一声，砰地关上了门。真嗣站起身，从冰箱里拿了瓶饮料，然后等了几分钟。正当明日香准备放弃睡觉时，真嗣站起身，敲了敲明日香的门。

"What is it, Third Child?" Asuka said behind the door, trying to sound hostile, "I thought I told you this is the impenetrable wall of Jericho..."

"什么事，第三适格者？"明日香在门后说道，试图显得敌意十足，“我以为我告诉过你这是坚不可摧的耶利哥之墙……”

"And the wall... fell, Asuka," Shinji said in a plain tone, trying hard to hide his nervousness, "I thought you want me to come in."

“而那堵墙...倒塌了，明日香，”真嗣用平淡的语气说道，努力掩饰着自己的紧张，“我以为你想让我进来。”

Asuka was more than happy to hear that. "Well, yes. I did want you to come in. It seems like you are not that dense." Shinji slid the door open, finding Asuka sitting on her futon. "I just want to talk to you.

明日香听到这话非常高兴。"嗯，是的。我确实想让你进来。看来你也没那么迟钝。" 真嗣推开门，看到明日香坐在她的被褥上。"我只是想和你谈谈。

Come and sit here, Third."

过来坐这儿，第三适格者。

"Shinji, I remember you said that you pilot the EVA to protect people you care about," Asuka said, her eyes looking straight forward, "Who in this world falls into that category?"

"真嗣，我记得你说过你驾驶 EVA 是为了保护你在乎的人，" 明日香说道，她的眼睛直视前方，"在这个世界上，有哪些人属于这个范畴呢？"

Shinji blinked; he had never expected that Asuka would ask such a question. From his intuition he gained by staying with Asuka in his world, he felt like there were something more hidden behind the question. But he was never good at dealing with girls. "Well, I care

真嗣眨了眨眼；他从未想过明日香会问这样的问题。通过在他世界里与明日香相处的直觉，他感觉这个问题背后隐藏着更多东西。但他向来不擅长应对女孩子。"嗯，我在乎很多人。NERV 的工作人员，我的同学，我的朋友，美里小姐，丽，还有.....你。" 他几乎是用耳语说出了最后一个词。

about a lot of people. People who work at NERV, my classmates, my friends, Misato-san, Rei, and... you." He said the last word in almost a whisper.

他几乎是用耳语说出了最后一个词。

"Why do you care about me?" Asuka raised her volume, "It's not like we are that acquainted with each other. I mean, it's only been like 10 days since we met. And I was sometimes abusive to you. *Why should* you care?"

"你为什么关心我？" 明日香提高了音量，"我们又不是很熟。我是说，我们才认识十天左右。而且我有时还对你很刻薄。你为什么要关心？"

"Errr..." Shinji couldn't answer this question. For sure he cared about Asuka, but that was largely from his care about the Asuka in his world. Although he knew this Asuka is not much different than that Asuka, and

he only wanted to make Asuka happy, he couldn't just say "I'm from the future, and I fell in love with you", at least not yet.

"呃..." 真嗣无法回答这个问题。他确实关心明日香，但这主要是因为他关心自己世界里的明日香。尽管他知道这个明日香和那个明日香差别不大，他只是想让明日香开心，但他不能直接说"我是从未来来的，我爱上了你"，至少现在还不能。

Instead, he said, "I care about you because I kinda admire you. Before you came here, no one was pushing me so hard. People tend to ignore me, no matter what I did. I always do what other people tell me to do, and they still don't care about me. They..."

相反，他说："我关心你是因为我有点敬佩你。在你来之前，没有人这么逼过我。人们总是忽视我，无论我做什么。我总是按照别人的吩咐去做，他们还是不在乎我。他们..."

Asuka shut him off, "Stop it. That's exactly why people ignore you!" Shinji was taken aback by her statement, "Wha-Why?"

明日香打断了他，"住口。这就是为什么人们忽视你！" 真嗣被她的话惊到了，"什-为什么？"

"Have you ever cared about the doormat you step on every day?" Asuka turned her gaze to Shinji, who was showing an absolutely astonished expression.

"你有没有关心过你每天踩在脚下的地垫？" 明日香将目光转向真嗣，他脸上露出了绝对震惊的表情。

"I-I have never thought about it this way." Shinji shook his head, "I guess you are right, Asuka. And maybe this is why I... care about you. You don't ignore me as others do."

"我-我从没这样想过。" 真嗣摇了摇头，"我想你是对的，明日香。也许这就是为什么我.....在乎你。你不像其他人那样忽视我。"

Asuka, somewhat satisfied with his explanation, laid down on her futon.

"Sure. Whatever. Don't expect me to stop pushing you, tho. I don't want a spineless wimp to be my wingman! Now go back to

"明日香对他的解释还算满意，便躺在了自己的被褥上。"好吧，随你怎么说。别指望我会停止督促你，不过。我可不想有个软弱无能的家伙当我的搭档！现在回去吧"

sleep!" 睡觉！

"Jawohl Mein Lieber" Shinji quickly ran away from Asuka.

“遵命，亲爱的” 真嗣迅速逃离了明日香。

"What did you say?" As the realization came down on her, her face turned deep red. "BAKA-SHINJI! DIE!"

"你说什么？" 意识到真相的她，脸颊瞬间涨得通红。"笨蛋真嗣！去死吧！"

The battle proceeded as expected. After both EVAs executed a simultaneous kick on the Angel's cores, the cores cracked and gave out. The EVAs were engulfed by a giant explosion.

战斗如预期般进行。两台 EVA 同时对使徒的核心发动踢击后，核心破裂并崩溃。EVA 被巨大的爆炸吞没。

"We did it!" Misato joyously exclaimed, jumping up and down, which Kaji took full advantage of, pulling her close and planted a kiss on her cheek. "我们成功了！" 美里兴奋地跳了起来，而加持趁机将她拉近，在她脸颊上印下一吻。

Misato scoffed, pulling away with remorseful looks, "Unit 01, Unit 02, do you copy?" She spoke into the microphone.

美里嗤之以鼻，带着悔恨的表情抽身离开，“初号机，零号机，能听到吗？”她对着麦克风说道。

"Roger." Both Asuka and Shinji replied simultaneously.

“收到。”明日香和真嗣同时回答。

Misato looked up at the video feed to see that both of their EVA Units were standing triumphantly atop the mountain outside of the city, side by side.

美里抬头看向视频画面，只见他们的 EVA 机体并肩站在城市外的山顶上，胜利地矗立着。

"Good job you two. We'll be sending a retrieval team to pick you up shortly. You two can relax a bit for now."

"干得好，你们俩。我们很快会派回收小组来接你们。现在你们可以稍微放松一下了。"

"You got it." Asuka said as she stretched her arm and yawned, "Oh, and you were not bad out there, Shinji."

"明白。" 明日香说着伸了个懒腰，打了个哈欠，"哦，还有，你在那儿表现得不错，真嗣。"

Shinji grinned. "Thanks. You fought well, too, Asuka." Asuka also smiled, closing her eyes.

真嗣咧嘴一笑。"谢谢。你也打得很好，明日香。" 明日香也微笑着，闭上了眼睛。

Back at NERV Headquarters, Fuyutsuki lowered his head and closed his eyes, a grin spread on his face. "Well, I'll be damned. They did it."

回到 NERV 总部，冬月低下头，闭上眼睛，脸上露出了笑容。"好吧，我真是服了。他们做到了。"

A/N Whoa! I had so much fun writing this chapter. WAFF content will eventually come. Shinji will go to the swimsuit shopping with Asuka.

作者注：哇！写这一章我玩得很开心。温馨内容终将到来。真嗣将与明日香一起去买泳装。

Things will change when fighting Sandalphon.

对抗桑达菲翁时，情况将会改变。

---

## Chapter 5: Loss

AN: Hi guys, here's another chapter. I want to thank all people who faved followed or reviewed. While the ending of ROE is still not clear, I am still writing. This chapter includes more daily life scenes and sandalphon. And some Rei scenes. Prepare for divergence from canon.

作者的话：大家好，又是一章更新。感谢所有收藏、关注或评论的朋友们。虽然《ROE》的结局仍未明朗，我仍在继续创作。本章包含更多日常生活场景和桑达尔丰的内容，还有一些丽的相关情节。准备迎接与原作的分歧吧。

Also, thanks to NoliVerga who pointed out the wrong height of Asuka. tbh, I was not familiar with feet and all that. For clarification: Asuka is 157cm tall.

另外，感谢 NoliVerga 指出明日香身高错误的问题。说实话，我对英尺这些单位不太熟悉。为了澄清：明日香的身高是 157 厘米。

I do not own Eva.

我不拥有《EVA》。

' ' character's thoughts

"角色的内心想法

" " dialogues Chapter 5: Loss

The day both pilots returned to the school went unexpectedly. As soon as Asuka and Shinji entered the classroom, they were greeted by a round of applause and cheers. Asuka was clearly flattered by the praise, showing a wide grin on her face. Shinji, on the other hand, just followed Asuka closely, trying to hide his face behind her. He was never used to be in the center of attention.

两位驾驶员回到学校的那天出乎意料地平静。Asuka 和 Shinji 一进教室，就迎来了一阵掌声和欢呼。Asuka 显然被赞扬所打动，脸上露出了灿烂的笑容。而 Shinji 则紧跟在 Asuka 身后，试图将脸藏在她的背后。他从未习惯成为众人关注的焦点。

They soon sat in their respective seat, and the Sensei continued about the economy after the second impact, eventually drifted into how great life was before the second impact, and how he was able to do all those amazing activities in leisure time. The students soon calmed down and opened their laptops to chat with friends.

他们很快坐到了各自的座位上，老师继续讲解第二次冲击后的经济状况，随后不知不觉地谈到了第二次冲击前生活的美好，以及他如何在闲暇时参与那些精彩的活动。学生们很快平静下来，打开笔记本电脑与朋友们聊天。

Shinji looked around, finding Rei was absent. 'weird,' he thought, 'Last time Rei was here when we were back. I wonder where did she go this time?' He made a decision to check on her half-sister after school. The day went by. As soon as the bell rang, he grabbed his  
Shinji 环顾四周，发现 Rei 不在。'奇怪，'他想，'上次我们回来时 Rei 还在这里。这次她去哪儿了呢？'他决定放学后去看看他的半血妹妹。一天就这样过去了。铃声一响，他立刻抓起他的

schoolbag, told Asuka about his destination, and hurried out the door.  
书包，告诉明日香他的目的地，然后匆匆出门。

Asuka was some kind of jealous although she knew Shinji was not the kind of guy who would have romantic relationships with two girls at once. But she was still worried about whether this Shinji will actually come together with her. Sighing internally, she diverted her course and headed in the direction where Shinji went.

虽然明日香知道真嗣不是那种会同时和两个女孩谈恋爱的男生，但她还是担心这个真嗣是否真的会和她在一起。内心叹息着，她改变了路线，朝着真嗣离开的方向走去。

Shinji came in front of the door of Rei's apartment, seeing the mailbox still full. Sighing, he knocked on the door. "Ayanami? Are you here? May I come in?"

真嗣站在丽公寓的门前，看到邮箱还是满满的。叹了口气，他敲了敲门。“绫波？你在吗？我可以进来吗？”

"Yes." was all he got.

“是。” 他只得到了这个回答。

Without hesitation, he pushed the door open. To his relief, he found Ayanami just sitting on the chair, reading. Noticing his presence, Rei raised her head, her crimson eyes looking at Shinji.

他毫不犹豫地推开门。令他宽慰的是，他看到绫波只是坐在椅子上阅读。注意到他的到来，绫波抬起头，她那深红色的眼睛看向真嗣。

"Rei, I was just wondering why u were absent from school. You know I'm ur... friend, so I care about u, and I wanted to check on u."

“绫波，我刚才在想你为什么没来学校。你知道我是你的……朋友，所以我关心你，我想来看看你。”

"I am in perfect health condition. I am not having any mental disorder." Rei replied, her facial expression never changing a little.

“我身体状况非常好。我没有精神障碍。” 绫波回答道，她的面部表情丝毫未变。

Shinji was taken aback by the flat, dead, and dry tone Rei used. Of course she was kinda always like this, but after Ramiel she should be more open and emotional to others. Shinji felt something was not right. Just as he was thinking, he heard Asuka's voice calling him.

真嗣被绫波那平淡、死寂、干涩的语气吓了一跳。当然，她一直都有点这样，但

在与雷米尔一战后，她应该对他人更加开放和情绪化才对。真嗣觉得有些不对劲。正当他思考时，他听到了明日香的声音在呼唤他。

"Shinji! Are you here?"

"真嗣！你在这里吗？"

'I never thought that this Asuka cares about me so much that she actually followed me here,' Shinji thought, surprised. He swiftly walked out, finding Asuka standing not far away. "Asuka! Im here!" He started waving his hand as he saw Asuka turned her head towards his direction.

“我从没想到这个明日香会这么关心我，竟然真的跟着我来了，”真嗣心想，感到惊讶。他迅速走出去，发现明日香就站在不远处。“明日香！我在这儿！”他看到明日香转头朝他的方向看过来，便开始挥手。

Asuka walked towards Shinji, mumbling, a disgusted look on her face.

"Shinji, what is this place? Is this where wonder girl lives? I won't keep a sick dog here! This place is a dump!" Asuka said in a remorseful tone.

明日香朝真嗣走去，嘴里嘟囔着，脸上露出厌恶的表情。“真嗣，这是什么地方？难道这就是奇迹女孩住的地方？我连一只病狗都不会让它待在这儿！这地方简直就是个垃圾场！”明日香带着悔恨的语气说道。

"Well, u have my father to blame on this..." Shinji said in a low voice, suddenly feeling guilty about how he hadn't done anything to help improve his sister's living condition.

“呃，这得怪我父亲……”真嗣低声说道，突然感到内疚，因为他什么也没做来改善妹妹的居住条件。

"Whatever. What are u doing here, anyway? Having a little Private meeting with wonder girl?" She said in a teasing tone.

"随你怎么说。你到底在这里干什么？和奇迹女孩开小会吗？”她用调侃的语气说道。

"N-No, Asuka! Im... just worried about her, since she was absent. I... there's nothing between us!" Shinji was thinking about whether he

"不，不，Asuka！我只是……担心她，因为她没来。我……我们之间没什么！”真嗣在想是否应该

should tell Asuka the truth about Rei.

告诉 Asuka 关于绫波的真相。



"Yeah, sure, I know there is nothing between u! No air gap, no covers, nothing but sweet!" Asuka was actually feeling somewhat angry, seeing how Shinji was actually blushing.

“是啊，当然，我知道你们之间什么都没有！没有空气间隙，没有遮挡物，只有甜蜜！”看到真嗣居然脸红了，明日香其实感到有些生气。

Shinji was also getting irritated, obviously by Asuka's paranoia. 'It's not like Asuka will tell NERV about I know Rei's my sister or something. Fuck it! Im not running away this time.' "Asuka, please! You are getting this all wrong!"

真嗣也开始烦躁起来，显然是被明日香的疑神疑鬼惹恼了。‘明日香又不会告诉 NERV 我知道丽是我妹妹什么的。管他呢！这次我不逃避了。’“明日香，拜托！你完全误会了！”

"Yeah, of course Im getting this wrong! Im wrong to be even standing here in the first place! Im wrong to interrupt ur little romantic meeting!" Asuka spat angrily, she turned around and began walking back.

“当然是我误会了！我一开始就不该站在这里！我就不该打断你们的小约会！”明日香愤怒地反驳，转身开始往回走。

"Asuka! Wait! Gaaaah! Couldn't u just be nicer to my sister?" Shinji finally said, sounding frustrated.

“明日香！等等！啊啊啊！你就不能对我姐姐好点吗？”真嗣终于说道，听起来很沮丧。

Asuka almost tripped at the word 'sister', she turned around to look at Shinji, her eyes widened in total shock, her expression  
明日香听到‘姐姐’这个词时差点绊倒，她转过身来看着真嗣，眼睛瞪得大大的，满脸震惊，表情

unreadable. "She's your WHAT?"  
难以捉摸。“她是你什么人？”

"My sister! Or at least half-sister, u could say." Shinji calmed down a bit, swallowing hard.

“我姐姐！或者至少可以说是同父异母的姐姐，你可以这么说。”真嗣稍微平静了一些，艰难地咽了咽口水。

'So this rival I have been competing so hard with is Shinji's freaking SISTER? God Im so pathetic! And why Shinji never told me about it, even

in my old world?" "Well, third, why did you not tell me about this earlier?" Asuka asked in a demanding tone.

'所以我一直在拼命竞争的对手竟然是真嗣的姐姐？天啊，我真是太可悲了！而且为什么真嗣从未告诉过我这件事，即使在我原来的世界？' "那么，第三点，你为什么没有早点告诉我这件事？" 明日香用一种命令的语气问道。

"Sorry..." The auto pilot still working. "Listen, Asuka. I know about things that I shouldn't know. This being one of them. Just don't tell anyone about this. Please." Shinji said with pleading eyes.

"对不起....." 自动驾驶还在运作。"听着，明日香。我知道一些我不该知道的事情。这就是其中之一。只是不要告诉任何人这件事。求你了。" 真嗣用恳求的眼神说道。

'Shinji knows about some NERV's secrets that I, as a time traveler, don't even know of. What a humiliation.' "Well, you can certainly count on me to keep your secret, Shinji. I promise." Asuka said, walking into the apartment. "Anyways, this place is so dirty. I thought you were caring enough to help improve your precious sister's living condition. And hi there, Ayanami." She greeted Rei, who only gave a nod.

'真嗣知道一些连我这个时间旅行者都不知晓的 NERV 秘密，真是丢脸。' '好吧，你完全可以相信我会保守你的秘密，真嗣。我保证。' 明日香说着走进了公寓。'话说回来，这里真脏。我以为你会足够关心，帮助改善你亲爱的妹妹的生活环境。还有，你好啊，绫波。' 她向绫波打招呼，后者只是点了点头。

Irritated by Rei's coldness, Asuka decided to ignore her for now. She walked past Rei, examing the house. There was dirt everywhere. 对绫波的冷淡感到恼火，明日香决定暂时不理她。她从绫波身边走过，检查着房子。到处都是灰尘。

Then she came across a trash can, immediately recognized a certain box. 然后她发现了一个垃圾桶，立刻认出了某个盒子。

'Mein Gott... this is some hard tranquilizers... and the mood suppressants... Mein Gott... My stepmom was trying to make me a... doll... using these prescriptions...' "Ayanami, were you... taking these drugs?" Asuka said, horrified.

"我的天哪...这些是强效镇静剂...还有情绪抑制剂...我的天哪...我继母试图用这些处方把我变成...一个玩偶..." "绫波，你...在服用这些药物吗？" 明日香惊恐地说。

"Doctor Akagi instructed me to take the medicine. Her actions were approved by the commander."

"赤木博士指示我服用这些药物。她的行为得到了指挥官的批准。"

"Ayanami... you shouldn't be taking these... they make you into... a doll..."

"绫波...你不应该服用这些...它们会让你变成...一个玩偶..."

"I am not a doll."

"What's going on here?" Shinji came in, he had just finished

"这里发生了什么？" 真嗣走了进来，他刚刚结束

organizing the mailbox.

"Shinji, your... emm, Rei, was taking some medicine that was supposed to deal with serious mental disorders... they effectively caused Ayanami to be emotionless like this..."

"真嗣，你的...呃，丽，正在服用一些治疗严重精神障碍的药物...它们有效地导致了绫波变得如此无情感..."

"Wha-"

"Shinji... Im scared... I... I dont want to be like wonder girl! Who knows whether they would treat us like this? I'd rather die than live like this!"

Asuka cried, her beautiful blue pupils still unfocused due to astonishment.

"真嗣...我害怕...我...我不想变成那个无感情的女孩！谁知道他们会不会这样对待我们？我宁愿死也不愿这样活着！" 明日香哭泣着，她美丽的蓝色瞳孔仍因震惊而失焦。

"Doctor Akagi has increased my dosage today. She required my presence in my apartment for the convenience of observation." Rei suddenly said.

"Doctor Akagi 今天增加了我的药量。她要求我待在公寓里，方便观察。" 绫波突然说道。

"Rei... listen, you can't take these medicines anymore... they will only hurt you!" Shinji was worried about her, and grabbed Rei's right

"绫波...听着，你不能再吃这些药了...它们只会伤害你！" 真嗣担心她，抓住了绫波的右手

hand.

Asuka promptly flinched at Shinji's sudden physical contact with Rei, but soon calmed down as she remembered Rei's identity. "Ayanami, you should really listen to your broARHWOOPHMPF!" Shinji quickly covered Asuka's mouth using his vacant hand, blinked several times at Asuka. Asuka nodded, 'so, even Rei herself doesn't even know about this. I wonder how come Baka-Shinji acquired this information?' Shinji removed his hand. "Ahem, yes, Rei. Just stop taking these pills!"

明日香立刻对真嗣突然接触绫波的行为感到不适，但很快平静下来，想起了绫波的身份。"绫波，你真的应该听你哥哥的 ARHWOOPHMPF！" 真嗣迅速用空着的手捂住明日香的嘴，眨了几下眼示意明日香。明日香点头，心想，'连绫波自己都不知道这件事。真嗣这个笨蛋是怎么知道的？' 真嗣松开了手。"咳，是的，绫波。别再吃这些药了！"

"But the Commander had approved such arrangement."

"但司令官已经批准了这样的安排。"

"Aya... Rei, you shouldn't let others decide what you do. How about this, you can do some research online about these medicines. See what they could do to your body. Then you can decide whether to take them anymore. Sounds good?" Asuka said in a concerned

"绫波...丽，你不应该让别人决定你的行为。这样吧，你可以在网上查查这些药物的资料，看看它们对你的身体可能有什么影响。然后你再决定是否继续服用。听起来不错吧？" 明日香关切地说道，因为她完全能理解这种处境。

voice, since she could totally relate to the situation.

语气中带着同情，因为她完全能理解这种处境。

"Your suggestion is... agreeable." After a few seconds, Rei finally

"你的建议.....可以接受。" 几秒钟后，丽终于

replied. 回答道。

Both Shinji and Asuka sighed in relief. "Shinji, we should probably go home. Its getting late. I don't want to hear Misato tease us about we went on a date or something!" Asuka grabbed Shinji's wrist and dragged him along, who offered little resistance. Shooting a final

真嗣和明日香都松了一口气。"真嗣，我们可能该回家了。天色已晚，我不想听美里取笑我们是不是去约会了之类的！" 明日香抓住真嗣的手腕，拉着他一起走，真嗣几乎没有反抗。最后投去一瞥

concerning gaze to Rei, Shinji exited the apartment.  
对丽投以关切的目光后，真嗣离开了公寓。

Both teens walked toward their apartment in silence. They were still processing the shocking information. 'So that's why she always acts like a doll,' Asuka thought, shaking her head, 'It's a lot harder to hate her now. It's not her fault to act like this. And she's Shinji's sister?'  
两个少年默默地走向他们的公寓。他们仍在消化这令人震惊的信息。'难怪她总是像个玩偶一样行事，'明日香摇摇头想，'现在更难恨她了。这样表现并不是她的错。而且她是真嗣的妹妹？

That's even more astonishing. And she doesn't, no, couldn't know about it? There are so many dark secrets in NERV.' She sighed, turning around to see Shinji had a deep frown on his face.  
这更加令人惊讶。而且她不知道，不，不可能知道这些？NERV 里藏着太多黑暗的秘密。'她叹了口气，转身看到真嗣脸上带着深深的忧虑。

"Oi, Baka!" Shinji turned his gaze to Asuka, "What do we do about your sister? I mean, I've always hated dolls. But it's not her fault. We need to get her off the drugs, and she may become a normal teenage girl someday!"

"喂，笨蛋！" 真嗣转向明日香，"我们怎么处理你妹妹的事？我是说，我一直讨厌娃娃。但这不是她的错。我们需要让她戒掉毒品，也许有一天她会变成一个正常的少女！"

"I guess..." Shinji was not really listening to Asuka, since he had so much in his head. His sister, drugs, and the incoming fight with Sandalphon.

"What kind of answer was that? Oi! Baka-Shinji! This is your sister we are talking about!" Asuka raised her volume and flicked Shinji's forehead.

"我想....." 真嗣其实并没有在听明日香说话，因为他脑子里装了太多事情。他的妹妹、毒品，还有即将与桑达尔丰的战斗。"这是什么回答？喂！笨蛋真嗣！我们在说你妹妹的事！" 明日香提高了音量，弹了真嗣的额头一下。

"Ouch! Errr, Asuka?" Shinji finally snapped out of his train of thought, "Ah, for sure we need to get Rei off the drugs! But it's her decision, right? We can't really force her off the drugs! In the current state, she may even report this to my father! Anyways, I think I should tell Misato-san about this." Shinji knew Misato was in the Chain of Command, but he also knew Misato would not betray him. She was

"哎哟！呃，明日香？" 真嗣终于从思绪中回过神来，"啊，当然我们需要帮丽戒掉毒品！但这是她的决定，对吧？我们不能强迫她戒毒！以她现在的状态，她甚至可能把这事告诉我父亲！不过，我觉得我应该告诉美里小姐。" 真嗣知道美里在指挥链中，但他也知道美里不会背叛他。她是

also kept from most of NERV's dark secrets, after all.

毕竟，也被排除在 NERV 大多数黑暗秘密之外。

"Sure. I guess there's nothing more we could do for now, then." Asuka sighed, eyes looking at the ground, "Well, have you heard about the school trip to Okinawa? I'm soooo looking forward to it! Also, I can buy some new swimsuits tomorrow!" 'Although I've already known that we aren't going, this is a perfect chance to go shopping with Shinji.'

"当然。我想我们现在也没什么能做的了。" 明日香叹了口气，目光投向地面，"对了，你听说学校要去冲绳旅行吗？我超级期待的！而且，明天我可以去买些新泳装！" '虽然我知道我们不会去，但这可是和真嗣一起逛街的好机会。'

"Ah, yes. But I thought we pilots are on a permanent stand by? That, we are not supposed to leave Tokyo-3?" Shinji answered, clearly not getting Asuka's ideas.

"啊，是的。但我想我们这些驾驶员不是应该随时待命吗？也就是说，我们不应该离开第三新东京市？" 真嗣回答道，显然没领会明日香的意思。

"..." Asuka was almost speechless. "Anta Baka? ErrrARGHH! You are so frustrating!" She rolled her eyes and walked faster, leaving Shinji behind.

"..." 明日香几乎说不出话来。"你这个笨蛋？呃啊啊啊！你真是让人抓狂！" 她翻了个白眼，加快脚步，把真嗣甩在了后面。

'Women are impossible to understand...' Sighing internally, Shinji thought, 'Why would she say about swimsuit shopping to me tho? I thought the last time she went shopping with Kaji-san...' Suddenly, the realization came down on him.

'女人真是难以理解.....' 真嗣内心叹息着，'她为什么要跟我提泳装购物呢？我记得上次她是和加持先生一起去的.....' 突然间，他恍然大悟。

*"Shinji, lets go to school together, I don't want to walk alone." "Shinji, lets walk to the part and talk. Im bored."*

"真嗣，我们一起去学校吧，我不想一个人走。" "真嗣，我们去公园走走聊聊吧。我好无聊。"

"Shinji, lets go buy some snacks."

"真嗣，我们去买点零食吧。"

'She was asking me to do a lot of things with her... She wanted to go shopping with ME? Ah, it makes much more sense now why she acted like that. Gah, I would have never realized this if not Asuka in my world taught me how to deal with girls. But it will certainly sound perverted if I directly say anything about swimsuits.' Shinji quickly picked up his pace, catching up to Asuka. "Asuka, emmm... since we are not going to Okinawa, I wonder if we could do something together? Like... swimming in NERV's pool?"

"她让我和她一起做很多事情.....她想和我一起去购物？啊，现在我明白她为什么那样做了。要不是我世界的明日香教我如何与女孩相处，我永远不会意识到这一点。但如果我直接提到泳装，肯定会听起来很变态。" 真嗣加快了脚步，追上了明日香。"明日香，嗯.....既然我们不去冲绳，不知道我们能不能一起做点什么？比如.....在 NERV 的泳池里游泳？"

Asuka smiled, but not turning around. "hmpf, fine, whatever. Still gonna buy the swimsuits, tho."

明日香笑了笑，但没有转身。"哼，好吧，随便。不过还是要买泳装的。"

Misato had just emptied another can of beer. She was sitting on the floor, watching some soap shows on TV. With a hiss of the door and a synchronized announcement of "We're home!", two teens entered the room.

美里刚刚喝完又一罐啤酒。她坐在地板上，看着电视上的肥皂剧。随着门的一声响和同步的"我们回来了！"宣告，两个少年走进了房间。

"Welcome home!" Misato greeted, smiling. But her smile faded to a frown as she saw both teens' dejected expression. "What's wrong? Did you guys have a fight?"

"欢迎回家！" 美里笑着迎接，但她的笑容随着看到两个少年沮丧的表情而变成了皱眉。"怎么了？你们吵架了吗？"

"It's not about us, Misato-san," Shinji sighed, "It's about Rei."

"不是我们的事，美里小姐，" 真嗣叹了口气，"是关于绫波。"

"What about her?" Misato was so close to start teasing with 'Did you get her pregnant but she forced herself to swallow it, knowing it was probably

not a good time for such an inappropriate comment.

"她怎么了？" 美里差点就要开始调侃说'你是不是让她怀孕了但她自己吞下了这个秘密'，但她还是忍住了，知道现在可能不是说这种不恰当话的好时机。

"Well, it's hard to say... Misato-san, can we trust you about not telling anyone else, including Doctor Akagi? Because this may cause some bad things to happen..." Shinji replied, a pleading look in his

"嗯，很难说.....美里小姐，你能保证不告诉任何人，包括赤木博士吗？因为这可能会引发一些不好的事情....." 真嗣回答道，眼中带着恳求的神色

eyes.

Misato's eyes twitched, "Whoa, you seem so serious! What's wrong?"

'Don't tell me he did get her pregnant,' "Sure, you can count on me on keeping it secret if it could threaten your safety!"

美里的眼睛微微抽动，"哇，你看起来这么严肃！怎么了？" '别告诉我他真的让她怀孕了，' "当然，如果这会威胁到你的安全，我保证会保守秘密！"

Sighing again, Shinji stammered, "Misato-san, R-Rei, i-is..."

再次叹息，真嗣结巴地说："美里小姐，丽，丽她..."

"Rei has been drugged by the blonde bitch!" Asuka couldn't stand it longer, speaking angrily.

"丽被那个金发婊子下了药！" 明日香再也忍受不了，愤怒地说道。

"Who is blonde-you mean Ritsuko? Asuka! this is very impolite to..."

Misato was angry at first, since that's her friend Asuka was swearing at.

But her reasoning quickly calmed her down. 'Wait, what did she mean by 'drugged?' I want to get more information before jumping to any conclusions.' "Asuka, watch your language! What did you mean by drugged?"

"谁是金发的——你是说律子？明日香！这样对..." 美里一开始很生气，因为明日香在咒骂她的朋友。但她的理智很快让她冷静下来。'等等，她说的'下药'是什么意思？我想在得出任何结论之前先了解更多信息。' "明日香，注意你的言辞！你说的'下药'是什么意思？"

"Well, what did it sound like? Drugged, d-r-u-g-g-e-d, by an insane

"那么，听起来像什么？被下了药，d-r-u-g-g-e-d，被大量



amount of tranquilizers, mood suppressants, and sedatives! I don't  
镇静剂、情绪抑制剂和镇定剂！我甚至不知道她的身体是怎么运作的！

even know how her body even functions!"

连她的身体怎么运作的我都不清楚！ "

"WHA-Ho-how did you find out?" Misato was clearly shocked by the  
information, her expression unreadable.

"哇-嚯-你怎么发现的？ " 美里显然被这个消息震惊了， 她的表情难以捉摸。

"Misato-san, I was worried about Rei today since she didn't go to school. I  
went to her apartment, and Asuka followed me there. It was Asuka who  
found out about the drugs, since..."

"美里小姐，我今天担心绫波，因为她没去上学。我去了她的公寓，明日香也跟着  
我去了那里。是明日香发现了毒品，因为....."

"Since I was drugged by the same damn thing before," Asuka continued in  
a low voice, her eyes unfocused and gazing directly forward.

"因为我之前也被同样的该死东西下过药， " 明日香低声继续说道，眼神迷离，直  
视前方。

"Tha... that's pretty bad," Misato said, "Are you sure it's Rits? What did Rei  
say?"

"这...这情况挺严重的， " 美里说， "你确定是律子吗？ 丽是怎么说的？ "

"She said Doctor *Akagi* instructed her to take them, and the commander  
has approved it!"

"她说赤木博士指示她服用这些药物， 而且司令也批准了！ "

"Ah... Why... Rits..." Misato was still confused. 'You are hiding a lot of  
information from me, Rits. One day I will find out.' "So... Why would you  
tell me about all this?"

"啊...为什么...律子..." 美里仍然困惑不解。 '你对我隐瞒了很多信息， 律子。总有一  
天我会查清楚的。 ' "那么...你为什么要告诉我这一切？ "

"Because we trust you, Misato-san," Shinji looked directly into her eyes,  
"we are a family, eh? Family members are supposed to trust each other,  
right?"

"因为我们信任你， 美里小姐， " 真嗣直视着她的眼睛， "我们是一家人， 对吧？ 家  
人之间应该互相信任， 对吗？ "

"Right, Shinji, we are a family..." Misato sighed, "Alright you two, go do something else. Shinji can make some dinner, Asuka, you may take a shower if you want. I have to process this information..." She stood up and went for another beer.

"对，真嗣，我们是一家人....." 美里叹了口气，"好了，你们两个，去做点别的吧。真嗣可以准备晚饭，明日香，如果你想的话可以去洗个澡。我得处理这些信息....." 她站起来，又去拿了一罐啤酒。"

*"Baka. Don't go overboard." Asuka smiled, being pulled up from the deadly red abyss. "How are you going to survive this without a D- type equipment?"*

"笨蛋。别太过火了。" 明日香微笑着，从那致命的红色深渊中被拉了起来。"没有 D 型装备，你打算怎么活下去？"

*"Hadn't thought that far. But If the battery runs out, the muscle will still lock on." Shinji said, his voice indifferent. The timer on the screen kept flashing, indicating a very low battery level.*

"还没考虑到那一步。但如果电池耗尽，肌肉还是会锁定。" 真嗣说道，语气冷漠。屏幕上的计时器不断闪烁，显示电池电量极低。

*As time went by, the entry plug became hotter and hotter. Finally, the battery drained before they made it to the surface. As magma crush onto the unprotected Unit 01, Shinji closed his eyes, smiling...*

随着时间的推移，插入栓变得越来越热。最终，在他们到达地面之前，电池耗尽了。当岩浆压向未受保护的初号机时，真嗣闭上眼睛，微笑着.....

"... ka, Wake up!" Shinji shot open his eyes, finding Asuka standing beside his bed, shaking his shoulder.

".....卡，醒醒！" 真嗣猛地睁开眼睛，发现明日香站在他床边，摇着他的肩膀。

"Asuka? Wha..."

"Baka! You were having a nightmare! Your body was twitching! And... you were mumbling something."

"笨蛋！你刚才在做噩梦！身体还在抽搐！而且.....你在嘟囔些什么。"

"What? What did I say?" Shinji remembered his dream, suddenly feeling nervous about what he could have said.

"什么？我说了什么？" 真嗣想起了他的梦，突然感到紧张，不知道自己可能说了些什么。

"You were... mumbling my name," Asuka said, her face slightly blushed.

"Maybe it wasn't a bad dream at all? Did I interrupt something?" She said in a teasing tone.

"你在.....念叨我的名字，" 明日香说道，脸上微微泛红。"也许那根本不是什么噩梦？我是不是打断了什么？" 她用调侃的语气说道。

'Great, Shinji Ikari. I knew it!' "Ah! NO! Asuka, it's not like what you think! It was indeed some kind of nightmare!"

“太好了，碇真嗣。我就知道！” “啊！不！明日香，不是你想的那样！那确实是一场噩梦！”

"Eh? What is that supposed to mean? So dreaming about me is a nightmare to you?!" Asuka said angrily, however, her eyes were telling Shinji something else... there was hurt in her eyes.

“嗯？那是什么意思？所以梦到我对你来说是一场噩梦吗？！” 明日香生气地说，然而，她的眼神却在向真嗣传达着别的东西.....她的眼中流露出受伤的神情。

"Sorry! That's not what I meant! I..." Shinji took a deep breath. "I dreamed about me dying. While... saving you."

“对不起！我不是那个意思！我.....” 真嗣深吸了一口气。“我梦到我死了。在.....救你的过程中。”

'What? This certainly sounds weird.' "What do you mean, Third Child? It's not like I need anyone's help! At most, it should be me dying to save your ass!"

“什么？这听起来确实很奇怪。” “你说的‘第三子’是什么意思？我又不需要任何人的帮助！最多也就是我牺牲自己来救你！”

"... Maybe. But I don't want to see you hurt. Just like I said: you

“...也许吧。但我不想看到你受伤。就像我说的：你”

are... emmm, important to me."

“对我来说...嗯，很重要。”

"Hmpf, enough sappy words already! Forget about your stupid dream and make breakfast! We have some shopping to do today!"

"哼，够了，别再煽情了！忘了你那愚蠢的梦，去做早饭吧！我们今天还得去购物呢！”

"Hai. Wait, shopping? What for?" Shinji got up, thankfully he was still wearing something.

"嗯。等等，购物？买什么？" 真嗣起身，庆幸自己还穿着衣服。

"Anta Baka? I need to get some new swimsuits! My old ones are getting tight!"

"你个笨蛋？我需要买些新泳衣！旧的都穿不下了！"

Shinji blushed at the thought of seeing Asuka wearing a bikini, "Wha- t? I... It's so embarrassing! I'm a boy, and we are not like... together or something! You should do this with Hikari!" Although he already half-expected it, he was trying to sound not so enthusiastic. For one, he had already seen much more; Second, he doesn't want Asuka to regard him as a pervert, which he thought would very likely to happen if he accepted her offer immediately.

想到要看到明日香穿比基尼的样子，真嗣脸红了，“什、什么？我.....这太尴尬了！我是男生，我们又不是.....在一起什么的！你应该和光子一起去！”虽然他早已料到一半，但还是试图表现得不太热情。一来，他已经见过更多；二来，他不想让明日香把他当成变态，他认为如果立刻接受她的提议，这种情况很可能会发生。

"Hmpf, you are so boring! Boys would die for such an opportunity! Also, don't get wrong ideas! I only asked you to come to carry the bags for me! Maybe I could also get you some new clothes since you always wear the same stupid boring school uniform!" Asuka said, walking out of Shinji's room, "Just get going already! I'm tired of waiting!"

“哼，你真无趣！这种机会男生们可是求之不得的！还有，别想多了！我只是让你来帮我拿包的！也许我还可以给你买些新衣服，毕竟你总是穿着那件无聊透顶的校服！”明日香说着，走出了真嗣的房间，“快点走吧！我等得不耐烦了！”

Shinji had kept his dejected expression on his face along the way just like any other man would do when shopping with girls. Asuka, on the other hand, was looking happy. 'I finally got this dense Baka coming out with me. Meh, it's not like it was easier the first time.' 'Hey, Baka, we are here.' 一路上，真嗣保持着沮丧的表情，就像其他和女生逛街的男生一样。而明日香则显得很开心。‘我终于把这个迟钝的笨蛋带出来了。嘛，第一次也没那么容易。’ “嘿，笨蛋，我们到了。”

Shinji turned his head, just to look at a full store of revealing swimsuits. He immediately blushed and turned around, "Err, Asuka, you can go get what you want. I... I will be waiting for you here."

真嗣转过头，目光恰好落在一家满是性感泳装的店铺上。他立刻脸红了，转身说道：“呃，明日香，你可以去挑你想要的。我.....我就在这里等你。”

Asuka pouted, "Fine, whatever." She walked into the store and went  
明日香撅嘴道：“好吧，随便你。”她走进店里，径直走向

directly for the bikini with white and red stripes on it. She put on the  
那件红白条纹的比基尼。她拿起它，准备试穿。

swimsuit in the changing room, came out, and called to Shinji. "Shinji!  
What do you think about this one?"

在更衣室里换上泳装，走出来，向真嗣喊道：“真嗣！你觉得这件怎么样？”

Shinji reluctantly turned his head around, but once he saw at her his gaze  
couldn't move an inch. Asuka's body was perfect in that swimsuit.

Although he had seen more, after such a long time (after he time traveled)  
he still found himself frozen on the sight. His face blushed so red that  
would make Asuka's Unit 02 ashamed.

真嗣不情愿地转过头，但一看到她，目光就无法移动分毫。明日香穿着泳装的身体完美无瑕。尽管他见过更多，但经过这么长时间（自从他穿越时空后），他仍然发现自己被这一幕定住了。他的脸红得让明日香的二号机都感到羞愧。

Asuka was clearly satisfied with his reaction. She turned away with a faint  
smile on her face, walking into the changing room. Shinji just stood there;  
his brain was running at full power. 'Why did she just show off her *assets*  
to me? Asuka in my world said it means the girl likes you... Well, I guess  
she's not wrong...'

明日香显然对他的反应很满意。她带着淡淡的微笑转身走进更衣室。真嗣只是站在那里；他的大脑全速运转。“她为什么要向我展示她的资本？我世界的明日香说这意味着女孩喜欢你.....嗯，我想她说的没错.....”

After a minute or so, Asuka came out wearing her blue shirt and jeans.

"Shinji, let's go get some decent clothes for you!"

大约一分钟后，明日香穿着她的蓝色衬衫和牛仔裤走了出来。“真嗣，我们去给你买些像样的衣服吧！”

"Ah, yes Asuka," Shinji shook his head, trying to wipe out his perverted thoughts, "Well, what do you want to get for me?"

"啊，是的，明日香，" 真嗣摇了摇头，试图驱散那些不正经的想法，"那么，你想给我买些什么呢？"

"Emmm, some stylish t-shirts, a pair of jeans... at least something different. I don't want to come out with you wearing some boring school uniform!" Asuka crossed her arms around her chest, pouting.

"嗯，一些时髦的T恤，一条牛仔裤.....至少得有点不一样的东西。我可不想和你一起出门时，你还穿着那套无聊的校服！" 明日香双臂交叉在胸前，噘着嘴说道。

"Emmm, what do you mean by 'come out'? I mean, we are not..."

"嗯，你说的'出来'是什么意思？我是说，我们不是....."

"Don't push your luck, Third Child! After all, I have to come out with you casually, since we live together! Heh!" Asuka acting tsundere was nothing but cute.

"别得寸进尺了，三少爷！毕竟，我得和你一起随便出来，因为我们住在一起！哼！" 明日香表现得傲娇，但依然很可爱。

Shinji smiled, "Verstanden Mein Führer"

Asuka made another half-laugh, "You'd better be!"

明日香又半笑道，"你最好如此！"

Rei was reading. Instead of reading a book, she was reading the instructions on the cover of the medicine. 'This particular medicine is  
丽正在阅读。她没有看书，而是在阅读药瓶上的说明。'这种特定的药物是'

meant to treat people who have severe mood shifts by completely wiping out their emotions. But I am not in such a condition. Shinji and Asuka also seem to care about me. No one has ever done that for me before, except Commander Ikari. And that only happened once.

旨在通过完全消除他们的情感来治疗情绪波动剧烈的患者。但我并没有处于那种状态。真嗣和明日香似乎也很关心我。除了碇司令，以前从未有人这样对待过我，而且那只发生过一次。

Shinji and Asuka told me to make my own decision. Asuka said only dolls listen to others without rejection. I am not a doll. Maybe I should listen to

them, and stop taking these pills.' Having made her decision, Rei stood up and threw the medicine inside her wardrobe.

真嗣和明日香让我自己做决定。明日香说只有玩偶才会无条件听从他人。我不是玩偶。也许我应该听他们的，停止服用这些药片。'做出决定后，丽站起身，将药瓶扔进了衣柜里。

Shinji stared at his computer screen, trying to remember how Asuka had done the physics question last time. He thought he remembered something vaguely, but he was sure that he had forgotten about it.

真嗣盯着电脑屏幕，试图回忆上次明日香是如何解决那个物理问题的。他隐约记得一些片段，但确信自己已经忘记了。

Looking around, he saw Asuka had just come out of the NERV swimming pool, walking in his direction. But he didn't see Rei anywhere. That made him worried. "What are you doing, Shinji? Why don't you come for a swim?" Asuka asked, a smirk on her face.

环顾四周，他看到明日香刚从 NERV 的游泳池出来，正朝他走来。但他没看到绫波零的身影。这让他有些担心。“你在干什么，真嗣？怎么不来游泳？”明日香问道，脸上带着一丝戏谑的笑容。

"Sorry," Shinji replied, eyes still focusing on his screen. "I'm doing physics homework right now. Jeez, this is so hard!"

“对不起，”真嗣回答，目光依旧集中在屏幕上。“我正在做物理作业。天哪，这太难了！”

"Well, let me have a look," Asuka leaned over, giving Shinji a perfect view of her breasts, "Ah, these are easy." Typing. "Annnnd done!"

"好吧，让我看看，"明日香俯身过去，让真嗣得以一览她的胸部，"啊，这些很简单。"敲打着键盘。"然后，搞定！"

Shinji was still amazed by Asuka's intelligence, even though he had already experienced this once. "Wow, so that's the college-graduate girl that I know of."

尽管已经见识过一次，真嗣仍然对明日香的智慧感到惊叹。"哇，这就是我所知道的大学毕业女孩啊。"

"What do you expect from me? All in all, I'm the great Asuka Langley Soryu." Asuka smiled, "And what's this question asking for? You know, I can't really understand kanji well."

"你对我有什么期待？总之，我是伟大的惣流·明日香·兰格雷。" 明日香微笑着说，"这个问题在问什么？你知道的，我对汉字不太擅长。"

"Ah, this question is asking about thermal expansion," Shinji replied, "It sounds simple enough, but in terms of application..."

"啊，这个问题是关于热膨胀的，" 真嗣回答道，"听起来很简单，但在应用方面....."

Asuka got up and turned around a little, "Well, think about the application part in this way," she pulled her hands up to her chest, "If

明日香站起身，转了个圈，"好吧，这样想应用部分，" 她将双手举到胸前，"如果"

I was to warm up my breasts, do you think they will get bigger, or smaller?"

我加热我的胸部，你觉得它们会变大还是变小？"

"Yours are already big enough I guess," Shinji had prepared an answer for this, "It's not like you are not attractive if they are not larger."

"你的已经够大了，我想，" 真嗣对此早有准备，"就算不大，你也很迷人。"

Asuka was somewhat flattered, her face blushing a little. "Well, it's good for you to appreciate my beauty! Anyways, wanna swim now?"

明日香有些得意，脸颊微微泛红。"好吧，你能欣赏我的美貌也不错！话说回来，现在想游泳吗？"

"Sure, but I'm not really good at it." Shinji felt satisfied with his performance.

"当然，但我不是很擅长。" 真嗣对自己刚才的表现感到满意。"

"It's no problem, I could teach you." Asuka smiled, 'Shinji's finally not so boring. Good work, Asuka.' "Now, just get your asses moving!"

"没事的，我可以教你。" 明日香微笑着，'真嗣终于不那么无聊了。干得好，明日香。' "现在，赶紧动起来吧！"

Shinji quickly got up and grabbed his swimsuit. After few minutes, he came back to the pool, and Asuka was already in the water, waiting for him.

真嗣迅速起身，抓起他的泳裤。几分钟后，他回到泳池边，明日香已经在水里等着他了。



"Now, Shinji, tell me how much you know about swimming?"

"现在，真嗣，告诉我你对游泳了解多少？"

"Well, I don't really know much other than lying in the water floating."

"嗯，除了躺在水里漂浮，我其实不太懂别的。"

"Fine, now get down here, lie in the water, face down. Don't worry! I will support you!"

"好吧，现在下来，趴在水里。别担心！我会扶着你的！"

Shinji sighed, sitting down on the edge of the pool, putting his legs into the water. Seeing how reluctant he was, Asuka grabbed his wrist and dragged him down the water.

真嗣叹了口气，坐在池边，将双腿浸入水中。看到他如此不情愿，明日香抓住他的手腕，将他拖入水中。

Shinji's whole body shivered at the sudden contact with cold water, but soon adjusted. He felt relieved as his feet touched down on the bottom of the pool.

突然接触到冷水，真嗣全身一颤，但很快适应了。当他的脚触到泳池底部时，感到一阵释然。

"Now, get your feet off the ground! Which part of 'lying in the water facing down' you don't understand?" Asuka raised her volume, putting her right hand at Shinji's abdomen, her left hand at his chest,

"现在，把脚抬起来！‘脸朝下躺在水里’这句话你哪部分不明白？" 明日香提高了音量，右手放在真嗣的腹部，左手放在他的胸口，

lifting Shinji up. The buoyance of water made it very easy for her to do it. 将真嗣抬起。水的浮力让她做起来非常轻松。

Shinji, on the other hand, was promptly starting to feel uncomfortable in his pants, as Asuka's smooth hands pressing against his body had triggered some pleasant memories. He quickly calmed down, again using his old method of imagining a naked Commander Ikari.

另一方面，真嗣很快就开始在裤子里感到不适，因为明日香光滑的手按在他身上，勾起了一些愉快的回忆。他迅速平静下来，再次使用了想象赤裸的碇司令这一老方法。

Just as he was wondering in his own thought-world, Asuka retreated her hands slowly, trying not to make Shinji notice. And he did not.正当他在自己的思绪世界中游走时，明日香慢慢地收回双手，尽量不让真嗣注意到。而他确实没有察觉。

Asuka was happy that Shinji could still keep floating on himself. That's a good start.

明日香很高兴真嗣还能保持自我悬浮的状态。这是个好的开始。

"200 meters... 300 meters..."

The atmosphere in the research lab near Mount Asama had been tense ever since Captain Katsuragi had arrived. Although the woman was messy at home, she could be formal and professional when needed.

自从桂木队长来到浅间山附近的研究实验室以来，气氛一直很紧张。虽然这位女士在家时邋遢，但必要时她能表现得正式且专业。

They had been descending an unmanned drone into the pool of magma, hoping to find the source that was causing the disruption in the magma flow under Mount Asama. However, they hadn't found anything yet; and the drone was approaching dangerous depths.

他们一直在将一架无人驾驶飞行器降入岩浆池中，希望能找到导致浅间山下岩浆流紊乱的源头。然而，他们至今一无所获；而无人机正接近危险的深度。

"Captain Katsuragi," The lead scientist spoke up as he watched the altitude of the drone continue to drop more and more. "This drone will never be able to withstand the pressures you plan on putting it through."

“桂木队长，”首席科学家在观察无人机的海拔持续下降时开口说道，“这架无人机无法承受您计划让它承受的压力。”

"If we destroy it, then NERV will pay for a new one." She said in an indifferent tone.

"如果我们毁了它，NERV 会出钱买个新的。" 她用一种漠不关心的语气说道。

"Maximum safety depth reached." The young research announced.

"已达到最大安全深度。" 年轻的研究员宣布道。

"Continue the descend." Misato's gaze never moved a bit from the screen.

"继续下潜。" 美里目光始终未从屏幕上移开。

Moments later, a loud crack of metal was heard, and Misato gritted her teeth. They just needed to go a little bit farther down. The drone finally reached the depth that Misato wanted, and just at that moment, another loud crack was heard, and the video feed was  
片刻之后，一声金属断裂的巨响传来，美里咬紧了牙关。他们只需再往下一点。无人机终于到达了美里所需的深度，就在这时，又一声巨响传来，视频信号中断了。

severed.

"The drone has been destroyed." One of the engineers announced in  
“无人机已被摧毁。”一名工程师宣布道。

comms.

"Did you get the photo?" Misato turned her head toward the screen that the technician was looking at.

“照片拍到了吗？”美里转向技术人员正在查看的屏幕。

"Yeah." On the screen was a picture of what looked like a skeletal embryo of some sort. "The scan reads pattern blue." He swallowed hard, "It's an Angel."

“嗯。”屏幕上显示着一张看似某种骸骨胚胎的图片。“扫描结果显示为蓝色模式。”他艰难地咽了口唾沫，“这是一只使徒。”

Misato took a deep breath and stood straight. "Everyone, this laboratory is now officially under the jurisdiction of NERV!" She announced, "This facility is to be locked down. No one is to get in or out! And anything that happens here is to be declared confidential!"

美里深吸一口气，站得笔直。“各位，这个实验室现在正式归 NERV 管辖！”她宣布道，“该设施将被封锁。任何人不得进出！这里发生的一切都将被列为机密！”

SEELE 01: "Ikari, I have noticed that NERV had issued an order A- 17 to engage the 8th Angel."

SEELE 01: “碇，我注意到 NERV 已下达 A-17 号指令，以应对第 8 使徒。”

Ikari: "That is correct."

碇: “那是正确的。”

SEELE 03: "Are you sure this is safe? We have never acted offensive before!"

Seele 03: "你确定这安全吗? 我们以前从未采取过攻击行动!"

Ikari: "I will ensure the execution of the scenario. A living sample of an Angel will provide helpful information."

碇: "我会确保剧本的执行。一个活着的使徒样本将提供有用的信息。"

SEELE 08: "Ikari, you know what happens when the scenario is threatened."

SEELE 08: "碇, 你知道当剧本受到威胁时会发生什么。"

Ikari: "That is correct."

碇: "没错。"

SEELE 03: "You'd better be, Gendo. Besides, it seems like the Second and Third Children are getting close to each other."

SEELE 03: "你最好明白, 源堂。此外, 看来第二适格者和第三适格者之间的关系正在拉近。"

Ikari: "I have received Section 2 reports regarding the closeness between the Second and Third Children. Thus the anchor is chosen. In the worst case, after all of the Angel is defeated, I will sacrifice the Second to Make the Third child manipulatable."

碇司令: "我已收到关于二号机与三号机之间亲密关系的第二部分报告。因此, 锚定人选已确定。在最坏的情况下, 即便所有使徒都被击败, 我也会牺牲二号机以使三号机变得可操控。"

Shinji and Asuka walked towards Rei's apartment. They were both worried about her since they both noticed Rei's absence from the pool, and they both remembered that in their timeline, Rei was there with them.

真嗣和明日香走向绫波的公寓。两人都为她的安危感到担忧, 因为他们都注意到绫波没有出现在泳池边, 而且他们都记得在他们的时间线里, 绫波是和他们在一起的。

"Do you think Rei would listen to us?" Shinji asked, worried. He never thought about why Rei was acting as she did, he always thought that was her personality. However, he was happy about Asuka actually started accepting Rei. He didn't know why Asuka had always hated her; now though, he knew that Asuka was half-jealous, and another half came from her hatred towards dolls. Now that both reasons were invalidated, she

really didn't have to hate her anymore.

“你觉得绫波会听我们的吗？”真嗣担忧地问。他从未深究过绫波为何如此行事，总以为那是她的性格使然。然而，他对于明日香开始接纳绫波感到高兴。他不知道明日香为何一直讨厌绫波；现在他明白了，一半是出于嫉妒，另一半则是对玩偶的厌恶。既然这两个理由都不复存在，她真的没有理由再讨厌她了。

"Relax, Shinji, I'm sure that wonder girl could take care of herself!" Asuka reassured Shinji, but she was indeed somewhat worried. 'It's not like anything worse than what had happened could happen,' she tried to convince herself, 'and we really should get her out of that dump. It was a freaking demolition zone!'

"“放松，真嗣，我相信那个奇迹女孩能照顾好自己的！”明日香安慰真嗣，但她确实有些担心。‘再糟糕也不会比之前发生的事更糟了，’她试图说服自己，‘而且我们真的应该把她从那个破地方救出来。那简直就是个废墟！’”

Standing in front of the door of Rei's apartment, Shinji felt extremely nervous. He knocked on the door several times, but no replies were coming out. Shinji knocked again, "Rei! It's us! Are you here? May we come in?" Still no reply.

站在绫波的公寓门前，真嗣感到异常紧张。他敲了几次门，但没有回应。真嗣又敲了敲，“绫波！是我们！你在吗？我们可以进来吗？”依然没有答复。

Shinji and Asuka exchanged a worried look, Asuka nodded. Shinji pushed the door open, a strain of light shined into the dark room. "Rei, are you here? We are coming in!" Shinji asked, keeping his voice low.

真嗣和明日香交换了一个担忧的眼神，明日香点头示意。真嗣推开门，一束光线照进了黑暗的房间。“绫波，你在吗？我们进来了！”真嗣轻声问道。

"Shinji..." mumbling.

"Rei!" Shinji swiftly ran towards Rei's bed and saw her lying there. Her expression was painful. "Rei, are you okay? What happened to you? Did they... let you take more drugs?"

"丽！"真嗣迅速跑向丽的床边，看到她躺在那里。她的表情很痛苦。“丽，你还好吗？你怎么了？他们是不是...让你吃了更多的药？”

"I... I stopped (swallow) taking them two days ago. It is expected that I will be experiencing (swallow) withdrawal symptoms. This includes nausea... (swallow), tiredness, and..." Rei peeked her head out of the bed, Shinji

immediately grabbed a nearby plastic bag and put it under Rei's mouth. Rei vomited into the bag. Asuka came and handed her a piece of tissue. "我...我两天前就停药了。预计会出现（吞咽）戒断症状。这包括恶心...（吞咽），疲倦，还有..." 丽从床上探出头来，真嗣立刻抓起附近的塑料袋放在丽嘴边。丽对着袋子呕吐。明日香过来递给她一张纸巾。

"God damn it! I should have expected these withdrawal symptoms!" Asuka said, clearly angry with herself. "Rei, we need to call Section 2 and they will get you to NERV hospital! ARGHHHHH! Fuck it! I don't care if the blonde bitch knows or not!"

"该死！我早该料到这些戒断症状的！" 明日香说道，显然对自己很生气。"丽，我们需要联系第二支部，他们会送你去 NERV 医院！啊啊啊！去他的！我才不管那个金发婊子知不知道！"

"That is... not desirable. There is a high probability that she will increase my dosage if she knows."

"那真是...不妙。如果她知道了，很可能会增加我的药量。"

"Asuka! Rei's right! We can't let her know! Maybe we can get some pills that deal with these withdrawal symptoms for her!"

"明日香！丽说得对！我们不能让她知道！也许我们可以给她找些缓解戒断症状的药！"

"Ye, you are probably right... Rei, we are going to get you some medicine! Oh, Scheiß e!" Asuka cursed as she felt her phone started vibrating. "An Angel attack? Seriously? What a great timing!"

"也对，你大概是对的...丽，我们要给你找些药！哦，该死！" 明日香咒骂着，感觉到手机开始震动。"使徒来袭？真的假的？这什么鬼时机！"

"You two need to go. I am in no immediate danger of permanent damage. I can be replaced if I die."

"你们两个需要离开。我并没有立即遭受永久性伤害的危险。如果我死了，我可以被替换。"

"What the hell are you talking about?" Asuka still didn't know about the truth of Rei. She didn't see it in her world's Shinji's memory.

"你到底在说什么？" 明日香仍然不知道丽真实身份的真相。她没有在她世界的真嗣记忆中看到这一点。

Shinji on the other hand had full awareness of Rei's identity. Even so, he couldn't just leave her alone. He also knew that this particular Angel attack can wait, since the Angel was still in its dormant embryo  
另一方面，真嗣完全了解丽的身份。即便如此，他也不能就这样丢下她不管。他也知道这次使徒攻击可以等待，因为使徒仍然处于休眠胚胎状态

form. "Rei, we can't leave you like this! We need to get you some treatment!"

「丽，我们不能就这样丢下你！我们需要给你找些治疗！」

"There is another solution. I can come with you, and get treatment from NERV. I will Make up a lie about my health condition."

「还有另一个办法。我可以跟你们一起去 NERV 接受治疗。我会编一个关于我健康状况的谎言。」

Both Asuka and Shinji had blinked. Did Rei just say she was willing to lie? That's something new.

明日香和真嗣都愣了一下。丽刚刚说她愿意撒谎？这可真是新鲜事。

Section 2 guards came into the apartment as they were thinking, and said to the pilots in a monotonous tone, "Pilot Ayanami, Pilot Soryu, Pilot Ikari. You are required to report to NERV headquarters immediately."

第二区的警卫在他们思考时进入了公寓，用单调的语气对驾驶员们说：“驾驶员绫波零、驾驶员惣流、驾驶员碇真嗣。你们需要立即前往 NERV 总部报到。”

Seeing no one could have a better solution to the situation, the pilots reluctantly turned around, "Pilot Ayanami is in no condition to pilot. 看到没有人能提出比这更好的解决方案，驾驶员们无奈地转身，“驾驶员绫波零目前无法驾驶。”

She needs medical attention now, me and Pilot Soryu will fight against the Angel."

她现在需要医疗救治，我和驾驶员惣流将迎战使徒。”

Section 2 agents nodded at them and called for a stretcher. They got Rei into a separate car from Asuka and Shinji, and headed for the Geofront. 第二课的特工向他们点头示意，并叫来了担架。他们将丽与明日香和真嗣分开，安置在另一辆车中，驶向地底都市。

Inside NERV headquarters, Ritsuko frowned as she read about Section 2's report on pilots' conditions. 'So Rei's sick, but that's not very likely. And the symptoms look exactly like withdrawal symptoms from the pills I gave her. Hmmmm, interesting.' Misato snapped her out of her train of thought, "Rits, we are down an EVA. Will Unit 01 and 02 be enough to handle this?"

在 NERV 总部内，律子皱着眉头阅读第二课关于驾驶员状况的报告。'丽生病了，但这不太可能。而且症状看起来完全像是她服用的药丸的戒断反应。嗯，有意思。'美里打断了她的思绪，"律子，我们少了一台 EVA。零一和零二号机能应付吗？"

"More than enough. The original plan was to have Unit 00 on stand by at the headquarters, so it won't make much difference."

"绰绰有余。原计划是让零零号机在总部待命，所以影响不大。"

Misato was fighting about whether to talk about the drug Ritsuko had instructed Rei to take. For one, she was a friend to Ritsuko. But she also knew that this woman is not that simple. She decided to put it  
美里正在纠结是否要谈论律子指示绫波服用的药物。一方面，她是律子的朋友。但她也很清楚，这个女人并不简单。她决定暂时搁置这个问题，因为对抗使徒的行动更为紧迫。

aside for now, since the offensive against the Angel was more  
暂时搁置，因为对抗使徒的行动更为  
important.

Inside the girl's locker room, Asuka had changed to the heat- resistant plug suit. She remembered how ugly this thing was, and decided to not inflate it until she got into the entry plug.

在女生更衣室里，明日香已经换上了耐热插入栓服。她记得这件衣服有多丑，决定在进入插入栓之前不充气。

"AHHHH! What did you do to my Unit 02?" She still had to act innocent.

“啊！你对我的零二号机做了什么？” 她还得装作无辜。

"It is a D-Type equipment, designed to work under extreme conditions," Ritsuko explained. As Asuka turned her death glare towards her, she felt a chill ran down her spine. 'Does she hate me so much just because of this?' Shaking her head off the thoughts,



“这是一种 D 型装备，设计用于极端条件下工作，” 律子解释道。当明日香将她的死亡凝视转向她时，她感到一股寒意沿着脊椎而下。‘难道她就这么恨我，仅仅因为这件事？’ 她摇摇头，摆脱这些念头，

she continued, "Asuka, do you understand the mission?"

继续问道：“明日香，你明白任务了吗？”

"Yeah, yeah." Asuka felt disgusted to just talk to this woman. Of course in her timeline, Ritsuko had already done a lot of bad things, making Asuka hate her. And now the whole drug thing just made it worse. Asuka turned around to look at Shinji, who was obviously looking nervous. "Hey, Baka. Don't worry, knowing my superior piloting skills, it has to be me to do this job." 'And I trust you to get me out of there, Baka-Shinji.'

“是啊，是啊。” 与这个女人交谈让明日香感到厌恶。当然，在她的时间线里，律子已经做了很多坏事，让明日香恨她。而现在整个药物事件更是雪上加霜。明日香转过身来看着真嗣，他显然显得很紧张。“嘿，笨蛋。别担心，凭借我卓越的驾驶技术，这项任务非我莫属。” ‘我相信你能把我救出来，笨蛋真嗣。’

Shinji forced a smile. He never wanted Asuka to do this. But he also knew that it could be more dangerous for Asuka if she had to save him. "Yes, Asuka. I believe you."

真嗣勉强笑了笑。他从未希望明日香去做这件事。但他也知道，如果明日香不得不救他，可能会更加危险。“是的，明日香。我相信你。”

Things went on as they remembered. Now Asuka was hanged by the cables above the volcano. The engine roared, and Unit 02 began its descent.

事情如他们记忆中那样进行。现在明日香被电缆悬挂在火山口上方。引擎轰鸣，二号机开始下降。

"Three-fifty... Four-hundred..." Maya announced the depth of Unit 02

“三百五十...四百...” 真嗣宣布零二号的深度

as it descends. 随着它不断下潜。

Shinji merely let out a sigh and shook his head as he watched Unit 02 went deeper and deeper.

真嗣只是叹了口气，摇了摇头，看着零二号越潜越深。

"Five-fifty... Six-hundred... Six-fifty... Seven-hundred..." Misato began to tap her foot nervously as she saw that pressure was increasing steadily around the critical joints of Unit 02.

“五百...六百...六百五十...七百...” 美里开始不安地用脚敲打着地面，她看到二号机关键关节处的压力正在稳步上升。

Shinji kept his eyes down at the pool of magma below. Even though only a few minutes had passed, it felt like an eternity. He tried to wipe his thoughts clean, but unable to. He had to save her, after all. Remembering how close it was, he couldn't help but clenched his fist tight around the control yoke.

真嗣低头看着下面的岩浆池。虽然只过了几分钟，却感觉像永恒一样漫长。他试图清空思绪，但做不到。毕竟，他必须救她。回想起那惊险的一刻，他不禁紧紧握住了操纵杆。

Inside Unit 02, the redhead could feel sweat start to pour out her body. Most of them were caused by heat, but there was also cold sweat caused by nervousness and anxiety.

在二号机内部，红发少女能感觉到汗水开始从身体中涌出。大部分是因为高温，但也有因紧张和焦虑而产生的冷汗。

"C'mon, Asuka." She mumbled to herself. "You have done this before. What's so hard about this? At least, you have that Baka backing you up."  
"来吧，明日香。" 她喃喃自语。"你以前做过这个。这有什么难的？至少，你有那个笨蛋在支持你。"

"Maximum safety depth reached." Maya's voice filled the cockpit.  
"达到最大安全深度。" 真嗣的声音充满了驾驶舱。"

Asuka could hear the sound of metal compressing under the immense pressure around her.

明日香能听到金属在周围巨大压力下压缩的声音。

"Unit 02 has reached the estimated target level," Maya announced. The cable stopped moving, letting Asuka dangle in the middle of the magma pool.

"初号机已到达预计目标深度，" 真希波宣布道。缆绳停止了移动，让明日香悬吊在岩浆池中央。

"Asuka," Misato spoke. "What do you see?"

"明日香，" 美里开口道，"你看到了什么？"

"I'm not detecting anything." She answered. "It's not here."

"我没有探测到任何东西。" 她回答，"它不在这里。"

"The lava currents must be faster than we thought," Ritsuko concluded.

"熔岩流的速度肯定比我们预想的要快，" 律子得出结论。

"The target's velocity certainly doesn't match our predictions," Makoto said, eyes focusing on the readings on the screen.

"目标的速度确实与我们的预测不符，" 真琴说，目光紧盯着屏幕上的读数。

"Well hurry up and recalculate," Misato ordered. "Continue the descent."

"那就快点重新计算，" 美里命令道。"继续下降。"

"Huh?" Makoto turned around and gave the Captain a perplexed look.

"Are you sure? If we go much deeper then the pilot could be put in danger."

"嗯？" 真琴转过身来，困惑地看着队长。"你确定吗？如果我们再深入，飞行员可能会陷入危险。"

"Asuka, are you okay out there?" Misato asked. "I'm perfectly fine. Lets continue."

"明日香，你那边还好吗？" 美里问道。"我完全没问题。继续前进吧。"

Taking a deep breath, Makoto pressed a button to continue the descent.

深吸一口气，真琴按下按钮继续下降。

Asuka kept searching for the target. There is no guarantee that the Angel would drift to the exact same location as in her timeline. As she went deeper and deeper, she could feel the pressure building around her body as the armor of D-Type equipment was pressed hard against Unit 02.

明日香继续搜寻目标。天使是否会漂流到她时间线中的确切位置并无保证。随着她越来越深入，她能感觉到压力在身体周围逐渐增加，D型装备的装甲紧紧压迫着二号机。

"Asuka, what's your status?" Misato's voice came from the comms.

"明日香，你那边情况如何？" 美里通过通讯器传来声音。

"Nothing to worry about. I just want to get this done and take a shower."

"没什么好担心的。我只是想快点完成任务，然后洗个澡。"

"Good. There's a nice hot spring near the mountain." Misato said with a smirk. She had always liked the redhead's confidence.

"好。山附近有个很棒的温泉。" 美里带着一丝狡黠说道。她一直很喜欢这位红发女孩的自信。

With a loud crack, the prog knife broke and fell into the red abyss. "Scheiß e!" Asuka cursed, "I've lost my prog knife!"

随着一声巨响，那把开拓刀断裂并坠入了红色的深渊。"该死！" 明日香咒骂道，"我的开拓刀丢了！"

"Catch mine, Asuka! Im sending it down to you!" Without hesitation or order, Shinji threw his prog knife down into the volcano.

"接住我的，明日香！我把它扔下去给你！" 没有犹豫或命令，真嗣将自己的开拓刀抛入了火山中。

"Depth, seventeen-eighty." Maya spoke. "Unit 02 has reached the estimated target depth."

"深度，一千七百八十。" 真希波报告道，"二号机已到达预计目标深度。"

Asuka began to look around her. "I think I see it." She said. About 30 meters in front of her was the oval-shaped Angel.

明日香开始环顾四周。"我想我看到了。" 她说。在她前方约三十米处，是那椭圆形的使徒。

"Scanner is reading blue." Makoto confirmed. "It's the Angel." "Begin capture." Misato commanded.

"扫描仪显示蓝色。" 真琴确认道，"是使徒。" "开始捕捉。" 美里命令道。

The electromagnetic cage that was mounted on Unit 02's hands began to open up and extend. Asuka's heart rate began to increase as she approached the egg.

安装在二号机手上的电磁笼开始展开并延伸。随着明日香接近那个蛋，她的心率也开始加快。

"Asuka, you only have one shot at this." Ritsuko said in the comms.

"明日香，你只有一次机会。" 律子在通讯中说道。

Asuka took a deep breath once the egg was within her grasp. The electromagnetic walls took form, sealing the embryo inside.

明日香在抓住蛋后深吸了一口气。电磁壁形成，将胚胎封闭在内。

"The Angel has been captured." She sighed. "Beginning ascent to the surface."

"天使已被捕获。" 她叹息道，"开始上升至地面。"

Everyone above the surface sighed in relief as the mission seemed accomplished, except Shinji. The prog knife he threw was halfway down. It should make it to Unit 02's location not long after the Angel hatches. 地面上的人们都松了一口气，似乎任务已经完成，除了真嗣。他投掷的程序刀正半途下落。它应该会在天使孵化后不久到达二号机的位置。

"What's happening?" Asuka yelled, "The Angel's hatching!"

"发生了什么？" 明日香大喊，"天使正在孵化！"

Everyone in the command room tensed up. The video feed was indeed showing the rapid growth of the embryo.

指挥室内的每个人都紧张起来。视频确实显示胚胎正在迅速增长。

"Abort the mission!" Misato ordered, "Jettison the cage! The destruction of the Angel now has the highest priority!"

"中止任务！" 美里命令道，"抛弃笼子！现在摧毁使徒是最高优先级！"

Asuka quickly gave up the cage, "Where's the knife?" She asked, panicking.

明日香迅速放弃了笼子，"刀在哪里？" 她慌张地问道。

"It's one hundred meters above you!" Maya said, "It's about to reach your position, Asuka!"

"它就在你上方一百米处！" 玛雅喊道，"就要到你那儿了，明日香！"

"Got it!" Asuka took a firm grip on the knife. "Now let's get this done!"

"明白！" 明日香紧紧握住刀柄，"现在就解决它！"

The Angel swam directly towards her as she remembered. Asuka still had to detach the weight to escape from a potentially deadly attack.

使徒径直向她游来，她回忆着。明日香仍需卸下重物才能逃脱这潜在的致命一击。

"I've lost the sight of the target!" Asuka said, "C'mon, show yourself!"  
"我失去了目标的视野！" 明日香喊道，"快现身吧！"

The Angel appeared again, charging faster this time. Asuka raised her knife to block the attack. The Angel took a firm grip on Unit 02, and opened its mouth, trying to swallow its head.

使徒再次出现，这次速度更快。明日香举起刀进行防御。使徒紧紧抓住 02 号机，张开嘴，试图吞下它的头部。

"Oh my god, it can't just open its mouth in lava like that!" Ritsuko was shocked, failing to think about any solution. Everybody else was watching the video feed nervously as Unit 02's attacks on the Angel went ineffective.

"天哪，它怎么能像那样在熔岩中张开嘴！" 律子震惊不已，一时想不出任何解决办法。其他人紧张地看着 02 号机对使徒无效的攻击视频。

'so it always has to become like this,' Asuka thought. Without a word, she raised her knife and cut off one of the cables.

"所以总是会变成这样，" 明日香心想。她一言不发，举起刀切断了其中一根电缆。

Which was the biggest mistake she could make that time. "Misato! Im using thermal expansion!" Asuka shouted in comms. "Yes! Thermal expansion!" Ritsuko said, turning toward Makoto,

那次她犯的最大错误莫过于此。"美里！我在利用热膨胀！" 明日香在通讯中喊道。"没错！热膨胀！" 律子说着，转向真，

"send all coolant through cable three!"

"把所有冷却剂通过三号电缆输送！"

The coolant flew out the severed cable and poured onto the Angel's core. Using all her might, Asuka slammed the prog knife onto it. The Angel cried in pain as its body began giving out. Its right hand severed all cables, leaving only a small part of the cable connecting, before its whole body fell and disintegrated.

冷却液从断裂的电缆中喷涌而出，倾泻在使徒的核心上。阿斯卡尽全力将程序刀猛击其上。使徒痛苦地哀嚎，身体开始崩溃。它的右手切断了所有电缆，仅剩一小部分相连，随后整个身躯坠落并瓦解。

Asuka looked up. She heard people yelling in comms. She saw Unit 01 coming down. Everything was proceeding as intended. But something's not right.

阿斯卡抬头望去，听到通讯频道中人们的呼喊。她看到初号机正在降落。一切都在按计划进行。但有些不对劲。

Unit 01 was too far away.

初号机距离太远了。

She suddenly realized her mistake. She had killed the Angel too early. Back in her timeline, the Angel had kept ascending with her for  
她突然意识到自己的错误。她杀天使杀得太早了。在她原本的时间线里，天使曾与她一同上升了

a while. But this time she was in a hurry, and by the time the Angel was defeated, she was still far below the surface.

一段时间。但这次她急于行动，等到天使被击败时，她仍远在地下深处。

Inside Unit 01, Shinji had also noticed the issue. 'no no no no no...' He was desperately trying to dive down as fast as possible, Unit 01's hand gripping on the cables and pulling itself downwards. 'Just... so close... few hundred meters...'

在初号机内部，真嗣也察觉到了问题。'不不不不不.....'他拼命试图尽快下潜，初号机紧握着电缆，借助拉力向下移动。'就差.....几百米了.....'

The cable snapped. Unit 02 fell down.

电缆断裂了。02 号机坠落了。

Unit 01 reached out its arm, just to grab on to a handful of magma.

01 号机伸出它的手臂，却只抓到了一把岩浆。

Asuka sighed, suddenly feeling relieved. 'I guess this is it, then. Ha, I should've died already anyway. I wonder where would I go after I die? Probably back to where I came from. It's just... this Shinji would be so sad...' She opened her comm window to Unit 01.

明日香叹了口气，突然感到一阵释然。'我想这就是结局了吧。哈，反正我早该死了。不知道死后我会去哪里？大概回到我来的地方。只是.....这个真嗣会很难过吧.....'她打开了与 01 号机的通讯窗口。

"... to-san! Send the cable down! I NEED TO SAVE HER! MISATO- SAN!  
MAKOTO-SAN! PLEASE! LET ME DOWN! please (sob)... I

"... 透先生！把缆绳放下来！我必须救她！美里小姐！诚先生！求求你们！让我下去！求求你们（抽泣）... 我

can't lose her... (sob)"  
不能失去她...（抽泣）"

"Baka, why would you cry?" She smiled into the window. "Asuka! I... I... I need you! I... Misato-san! Please let me down!"

"笨蛋，你为什么要哭呢？" 她对着窗户微笑。"明日香！我...我...我需要你！我...美里小姐！请让我下去！"

"Baka, you'll still have others (crack), you still have (crack) Rei, Misato, (crack), all these people who care about (crack) you."

"笨蛋，你还有其他人（咔嚓），你还有（咔嚓）丽、美里、（咔嚓），所有这些关心（咔嚓）你的人。"

"Asuka... no... please..." *'no no No NO NO NO NO! I love you Asuka! I can't lose you! Don't leave me! I... I can't take it anymore...'* "Asuka, you... I..."

"明日香...不...求求你..." '不不不不不不！我爱你明日香！我不能失去你！不要离开我！我...我再也受不了了...' "明日香，你...我..."

"Baka, don't cry. Shinji, (crack) I just (crack) want you to (crack) know, that... I'm ha(crack)ppy to have you (crack) in my life... Shinji... I (CRACK) Buzzzzzzzzzz..."

"笨蛋，别哭了。真嗣，（咔嚓）我只是（咔嚓）想让你（咔嚓）知道，那...我很（咔嚓）高兴有你（咔嚓）在我的生活中...真嗣...我（咔嚓）嗡嗡嗡嗡..."

The feed became static after a loud crack.  
信号在一声巨响后变成了静态。

"ASUKAAAAAAAAAAAA!" Shinji's cry had filled the entire channel.  
“绫波啊啊啊啊啊！”真嗣的呼喊声充满了整个频道。

'Is this what it takes to try to play with time? To just lose her again?'  
Shinji's eyes were filled with tears, they flew out of his eyes, and immediately dissolved into LCL.



“难道这就是尝试玩弄时间的代价吗？再次失去她？”真嗣的眼中充满了泪水，它们从他的眼中飞出，随即溶解在 LCL 中。

Inside the command center, everyone watched in silence as Asuka and Shinji's last exchange was played. After the final crack, the feed from Unit 02 became static.

指挥中心内，众人沉默地观看着绫波零和真嗣最后的对话。随着最后一声破裂，零号机的信号变成了静态。

"Pilot vitals... signal lost. Video feed... signal lost. Voice feed... signal lost. All sensors have gone dark. Unit 02... has gone silent." Makoto said slowly.

“驾驶员生命体征.....信号丢失。视频信号.....信号丢失。语音信号.....信号丢失。所有传感器都已失灵。零号机.....已无声息。”真希波缓缓说道。

"Are... are there any possibility of recovery? Even if it's only..." Misato swallowed hard, feeling her eyes started to become teary.

“还.....还有恢复的可能吗？哪怕只是.....”美里艰难地咽了咽口水，感到眼眶开始湿润。

"Technically yes," Ritsuko said, "We could use a big magnet to recover it. Though whatever we get up would be nothing more than a squeezed metal ball. As for the pilot..." She trailed off as she herself was disgusted by the image in her head.

“理论上是的，”赤木律子说，“我们可以用一个大磁铁来回收它。不过我们能捞上来的，恐怕也只是一个被压扁的金属球罢了。至于驾驶员.....”她说到一半就停下了，因为脑海中的画面让她自己都感到恶心。

The background was only Shinji's crying and mumbling.  
背景中只有真嗣的哭泣和喃喃自语。

The people inside the command center remained silent for a long time. Aoba was just sitting there, eyes in disbelieve. Makoto stared into the screen that was once Unit 02's status panel, still hoping what he was seeing was fake. Misato just stood there, tears ran down her eyes, sobbing softly.

指挥中心内的人们长时间地沉默着。青叶只是坐在那里，眼神中满是难以置信。伊吹盯着曾经是二号机状态的面板，仍然希望自己所见是假的。美里只是站在那里，泪水从眼角滑落，轻轻地抽泣着。

Ritsuko stood for a while, and sighed. She took out her workstation, connected to MAGI, and started typing.

律子站了一会儿，叹了口气。她拿出工作站，连接到 MAGI 系统，开始打字。

MAGI database/pilot database Pilot name: Soryu Asuka Langley Pilot status: K.I.A.

MAGI 数据库/驾驶员数据库 驾驶员姓名：惣流·明日香·兰格雷 驾驶员状态：已阵亡

AN: Sorry for the cliffhanger. The next chapter will be out in two

作者注：抱歉留了个悬念。下一章将在两周后发布。

days, maybe one. I know you guys can't wait where I left with, if you don't hate me for what I did LOL. Reveal of Asuka and Shinji's true identity in the next Chapter. Canon is officially out of the window.

日子，或许只有一天。我知道你们等不及我之前留下的悬念，如果你们不因我所做的事而讨厌我的话，哈哈。下一章将揭露明日香和真嗣的真实身份。正统设定已正式抛诸脑后。

---

## Chapter 6: Rebirth

AN: Hi guys, promise kept! I don't want to keep you guys waiting since I know how unexpected the last chapter was. There were several reasons that I wrote "Asuka dies" scene in the last chapter. First, in the canon only 8th and 14th Angel had posed a real physical threat to her, other Angels were dealt with relatively easily. Second, since this fanfic also carries the purpose of practice, I wanted to try writing some emotional scenes and see how well I could do. Third, I need an event to push the plot forward. I don't really want to stick to the canon that much. So the earlier I make a significant divergence, the earlier you guys can get something fresh.

AN: 大家好，承诺兑现了！我知道上一章有多出人意料，不想让大家久等。上一章写“明日香之死”的场景有几个原因。首先，在原作中，只有第 8 和第 14 使徒对她构成了真正的物理威胁，其他使徒相对容易对付。其次，由于这篇同人也是练习之作，我想尝试写一些情感戏，看看自己能做得多好。第三，我需要一个事件来推动剧情发展。我并不想过于拘泥于原作，所以越早做出重大偏离，大家就能越早看到新鲜内容。

In this chapter, the truth about Asuka and Shinji will be revealed.

在本章中，关于明日香和真嗣的真相将被揭晓。

Anyways, remember this is an AsuShin story. And we still have a long way to go. Leave a Review!

无论如何，记住这是一篇明日香和真嗣的故事。我们还有很长的路要走。留下你的评论吧！

I do not own Evangelion. Chapter 6: Death and Rebirth

我不拥有《新世纪福音战士》。第六章：死亡与重生

*Shinji walked along the shore of the sea of LCL. He kept walking for a long time. After what felt like an eternity, he thought he saw something familiar. Something red on the beach far away from him, but he could clearly see it. He started running towards it. As the red figure grew in size, he could recognize it as a person. He saw the person's bright ginger hair. He saw the red plug suit. He saw two red A-10 clips resting on the person's head. He saw Asuka.*

真嗣沿着 LCL 之海的岸边行走。他走了很久很久。仿佛过了一个永恒，他觉得自己看到了一些熟悉的东西。在远处海滩上的一点红色，虽然距离遥远，但他能清晰地看见。他开始向它跑去。随着红色身影逐渐变大，他认出那是一个人。他看到了那人明亮的姜黄色头发。他看到了红色的插入栓服。他看到了那人头上的两个红色 A-10 发夹。他看到了明日香。

*"Asuka!" He cried out; tears began filling his eyes.*

“明日香！”他呼喊，泪水开始涌上眼眶。

*The person turned around, smiling. It was indeed Asuka. "Hi, Baka Shinji."*  
那人转过身来，微笑着。确实是明日香。“嗨，笨蛋真嗣。”

*"Asuka!" Shinji picked up his speed.*

“明日香！”真嗣加快了脚步。

*"Baka Shinji, I've been waiting for you." Asuka said, still smiling.*

“笨蛋真嗣，我一直在等你。”明日香说着，依旧微笑着。

*Shinji nearly crashed on her; he slid to the front of her on his knees, his arm instantly wrapped around her legs. "Asuka... Is this real?"*

“真嗣差点撞到她；他跪在她面前滑行，手臂立刻环抱住她的双腿。”明日香... 这是真的吗？”

*Asuka... Don't leave me... I-I love you! "*

明日香...别离开我...我-我爱你!

*"Y ou love me?" Asuka said, her expression never changed. "I thought you hated me."*

"你爱我?" 明日香说道, 她的表情毫无变化。 "我以为你讨厌我。 "

*"Wha-What?" Shinji gasped, "No! I have never hated you! "*

"什-什么?" 真嗣喘息着, "不! 我从未讨厌过你! "

*"No. Y ou hate me. Y ou left me to die." Asuka said, her body starting to fade away.*

"不, 你恨我。你让我等死。" 明日香说道, 她的身体开始逐渐消失。

*"No no no no! Asuka! Don't leave me! Asuka! A..."*

"不不不不! 明日香! 别离开我! 明日香! A..."

"... suka!" Shinji shot up from his bed, hyperventilating. His body was soaked in sweat, his eyes filled with tears. Remembering what had happened seven days earlier, he couldn't help but started crying harder.

"... 明日香!" 真嗣从床上猛地坐起, 呼吸急促。他的身体被汗水浸透, 眼中满是泪水。回想起七天前发生的事情, 他忍不住哭得更厉害了。

'I lost her... I lost her... I failed... Again... It's all my fault... I was supposed to go down there, not her!' Shinji cried for a little longer. After several minutes, he calmed down a bit and looked around at the alarm. It was saying 4:32 a.m. Sighing, he got up and changed his clothes. Just as he saw the T-shirt that Asuka had picked for him, he suddenly felt another urge to cry. He suppressed it by swallowing hard, wiping the tears off his face. Misato was very busy these days, due to the tremendous amount of paperwork caused by the loss of Unit 02. She was constantly absent from home, and that had left Shinji alone in the apartment. He had never felt so lonely before. He sighed again, standing up from his bed, and exited his room.

"我失去了她.....我失去了她.....我又失败了.....这都是我的错.....我本该下去的, 不是她!" 真嗣又哭了片刻。几分钟后, 他稍微平静了一些, 环顾四周, 看到闹钟显示着凌晨 4 点 32 分。他叹了口气, 起身换了衣服。就在他看到明日香为他挑选的那件 T 恤时, 突然又感到一阵想哭的冲动。他硬生生地咽了下去, 擦干了脸上的泪水。由于二号机损失带来的大量文书工作, 美里最近非常忙碌。她经常

不在家，这让真嗣独自一人待在公寓里。他从未感到如此孤独。他再次叹息，从床上站起来，走出了房间。

Knowing he wouldn't get any more sleep, he decided to make some breakfast. Today was supposed to be the day that school resumes, since his classmates were about to return from their trip to Okinawa. Misato had already left the apartment, leaving a note on the table, saying she has something important to do at NERV.

知道再也睡不着了，他决定做点早餐。今天本该是学校复课的日子，因为他的同学们即将从冲绳旅行回来。美里已经离开了公寓，在桌上留下了一张纸条，说她有重要的事情要去 NERV 处理。

*The day after the incident, NERV HQ*

*事件发生后的第二天，NERV 总部*

SEELE 01: "Ikari, I've read the reports regarding the loss of Unit 02 and the Second Child has been identified K.I.A. Do you have any arguments to defend yourself?" For once, Keel Lorenz actually sounded a little irritated.

"基尔议员 01：“碇，我已经看过关于二号机损失及二号适格者确认阵亡的报告。你有什么要为自己辩护的吗？”这一次，基尔·洛伦兹的声音中确实透出了一丝不悦。”

SEELE 02: "Ikari, now Rei is in no condition to pilot, that leaves Unit 01 as the only combat-ready Unit! We all know Unit 01 is the key to instrumentality! We can't take the risk!"

基尔议员 02：“碇，现在零无法驾驶，这意味着初号机成了唯一具备作战能力的机体！我们都知道初号机是实现人类补完计划的关键！我们不能冒这个险！”

Ikari: "This is... certainly unexpected." He paused for a few seconds, "But I do believe the scenario is not fundamentally threatened. After all, she will protect him no matter what." Although Gendo was so unwilling to use Unit 01 as a frontline combat Unit, since his beloved Yui was in there, for now, there are not many other options. "And Unit 03 and 04 will be combat-ready within a few weeks. Tell the Americans to transfer them to us as soon as possible."

碇：“这……确实出乎意料。”他停顿了几秒，“但我相信这并未从根本上威胁到计划。毕竟，无论发生什么，她都会保护他的。”尽管碇不愿将初号机作为前线作战单位，因为他的挚爱唯就在其中，但眼下别无选择。“而三号机和四号机将在几周内准备就绪。告诉美国人尽快将它们移交给我们。”

SEELE 05: "I can hardly agree with you, Gendo. But there are not many options left. We will arrange the transportations as you wish."

SEELE 05: "我很难同意你的观点，源堂。但我们的选择已经不多了。我们会按照你的要求安排运输。"

*Seven days after the incident, Mount Asama*

*事件发生七天后，浅间山*

Ritsuko looked at the MAGI operations log nervously. Outside of the command room, a huge titanium alloy armored electronic magnet was hanged on a big crane. The recovery of Unit 02, or rather its core since they didn't expect anything more, was supposed to take place much later, at least after the confirmation of Unit 02's exact location, which was supposed to be a nearly impossible task.

律子紧张地看着 MAGI 操作日志。指挥室外，一个巨大的钛合金装甲电磁铁被悬挂在一台大型起重机上。本应是在确认二号机确切位置之后，才进行的二号机回收工作，或者说回收其核心，因为他们并不期待更多，现在却提前进行，而确认二号机位置本应是一项几乎不可能完成的任务。

However, the day after the incident, when she was checking on MAGI's operations log, she found something disturbing. The MAGI was recording everything that had happened that day, and at the time the communication with Unit 02 was cut off, MAGI started detecting AT-Field presence at Unit 02's location. The MAGI thought it natural that Unit 02 was to produce AT-Fields, so it didn't trigger any type of alarms, and MAGI merely recorded this in the log. Plus,

然而，事故发生后的第二天，当她在检查 MAGI 的操作日志时，发现了一些令人不安的事情。MAGI 记录了那天发生的所有情况，而在与二号机通讯中断的时刻，MAGI 开始在二号机所在位置检测到 AT 力场的存在。MAGI 认为二号机产生 AT 力场是理所当然的，因此并未触发任何警报，只是将这一情况记录在日志中。此外，

the people who were in the command room were too shocked to respond to anything, no one had noticed such a small anomaly. Aside from these strange occurrences, both pilot's sync ratios had been holding steady at near 90% during the last moments of the operation. Shinji must've been in great pain, although his AT-Field had blocked the major damage. But that's not important anymore.

指挥室里的人们过于震惊，以至于对任何事情都反应不过来，没有人注意到这样一个小异常。除了这些奇怪的现象，两位驾驶员在操作最后时刻的同步率一直稳定在接近 90%。真嗣一定承受着巨大的痛苦，尽管他的 AT 力场阻挡了大部分伤害。但这已经不重要了。

Because the AT-Field hadn't disappeared yet.  
因为 AT 力场尚未消失。

Ritsuko frowned. This is virtually impossible. The internal battery of Unit 02 should have long drained completely by now, and the only goal of their mission was to recover the core. If it was not Unit 02 that's producing the AT-Field, then what it was? Another Angel? Or the 8th was still alive? Nah, they all saw the Angel disintegrated into nothingness, and pattern blue had indeed disappeared.

律子皱起眉头。这几乎是不可能的。二号机的内部电池应该早就完全耗尽了，他们的任务目标仅仅是回收核心。如果不是二号机在产生 AT 力场，那会是什么？另一个使徒？还是第八使徒仍然活着？不，他们都亲眼看到使徒化为乌有，蓝色模式确实消失了。

The MAGI detected that the source of the AT-Field is 3672 meters below the surface, resting on top of a cliff inside the magma chamber. At such depth, the pressure was enough to crush the whole Unit 02 and its D-Type equipment into a solid ball.

MAGI 系统检测到 AT 力场的源头位于地表下 3672 米处，位于岩浆室内的一个悬崖顶部。在这样的深度，压力足以将整个二号机及其 D 型装备压成一个实心球。

But now that they knew something was there. Whether it's Unit 02 or not, it was worth a try. After all, sending a completely unmanned magnet down the volcano has zero risks. As for the pressure, the magnet itself was completely solid, and it should still function even if its structural integrity was damaged.

但现在他们知道那里有东西。无论是二号机与否，都值得一试。毕竟，向火山中发送一个完全无人驾驶的磁铁没有任何风险。至于压力，磁铁本身是完全坚固的，即使其结构完整性受损，它应该仍然能正常工作。

"Starting the decent." Aoba said, "contact ETA 9 minutes."  
“开始下降。”青叶说，“联系预计到达时间 9 分钟。”

Misato was also there. After all, she wanted at least a formal funeral to the Second Child, and the recovery of her body was much preferred, although she didn't get her hopes up. 'Just anything, anything would do... even if it's just...' She couldn't think further.

美里也在那里。毕竟，她至少希望为第二适格者举行一个正式的葬礼，并且更希望找回她的遗体，尽管她没有抱太大希望。‘只要有什么，什么都行.....即使只是.....’她无法再想下去。

Misato sighed, remembering how Shinji was acting for the past few days. She was very worried about Shinji's mental condition, although it didn't make much sense to her. 'Does he care about her that much? I mean, of course I feel very sad for her, but Shinji had only met her for about three weeks? I could see that they really liked each

美里叹了口气，回想起真嗣过去几天的行为。她非常担心真嗣的心理状况，尽管这在她看来并不太合理。‘他真的那么在乎她吗？我是说，当然我为她感到非常难过，但真嗣只和她相处了大约三周？我能看出他们真的很喜欢彼此’

other, but It's surprising to see Shinji became so depressed after she had gone.' Misato sighed; memories of the past few days emerged in her mind.

其他人都还好，但真嗣在她离开后变得如此消沉，真是令人惊讶。‘美里叹了口气；过去几天的记忆涌上心头。

*Two days after the incident, K atsuragi Residence*

事件发生两天后，葛城家

*Misato entered the apartment, announcing "I'm home". She didn't get any reply which she always does. Sighing, she walked towards Shinji's bedroom and stood in front of the door. There was no sound coming out whatsoever, and that got Misato worried. She knocked on the door, and no reply came out. Sighing again, Misato said, "I'm coming in, Shinji-kun." She slid the door open.*

美里走进公寓，宣布道：“我回来了。”她没有得到平时总会有的回应。叹了口气，她走向真嗣的卧室，站在门前。没有任何声音传出，这让美里感到担忧。她敲了敲门，没有回应。再次叹气，美里说：“我要进来了，真嗣君。”她拉开了门。

*Shinji was lying on the bed, his empty gaze directed at the ceiling. Listening to his SDAT, Shinji was completely still, and not showing any*



*signs of acknowledging Misato's presence.*

真嗣躺在床上，空洞的目光投向天花板。他听着 SDAT，一动不动，丝毫没有表现出注意到美里存在的迹象。

*"Y ou do love her, don't you?" Misato suddenly said after a minute of silence.*

“你确实爱她，对吧？” 美里在沉默了一分钟后突然说道。

*Shinji simply nodded. 真嗣只是点了点头。*

*Misato felt confused. They had only met each other for about 3 weeks, and they already fell in deep love like this? "Shinji, listen to me... you've only met her for about three weeks... and I know that doesn't sound right, but you should move on with your life. And... I promise you that we'll get her out, no matter what... and... we'll give her a formal..." She stopped speaking, seeing Shinji's body twitched at her words. "Mi-Misato-san, ha-have y-you, ever, felt s-so much pain, th-that yo-you stopped feeling an-anything? I felt... a part of me has died as well." In Shinji's mind, there were never two Asukas.*

美里感到困惑。他们才认识大约三周，就已经深陷爱河了吗？“真嗣，听我说.....你才认识她大约三周.....我知道这听起来不对，但你应该继续你的生活。而且.....我向你保证，无论如何我们都会把她救出来.....并且.....我们会给她一个正式的.....”她停了下来，看到真嗣听到她的话时身体抽搐了一下。“美-美里小姐，你-你有没有，曾经，感到如此痛苦，以至于你-你停止了感受任何东西？我感到.....我的一部分也死了。”在真嗣的心中，从来没有两个明日香。

*There was only one Asuka, the girl that he loved, and he had lost her twice.*

只有一个明日香，他爱的那个女孩，而他失去了她两次。

*Misato took a deep breath, and tried again. "Shinji... I know that you are in great pain but... there are still people who care about you." Suddenly she remembered something. "And... Rei has been*

“美里深吸了一口气，再次尝试。 “真嗣.....我知道你很痛苦，但.....还有人在乎你。”突然她想起了什么。 “而且.....丽一直在”

*released from the hospital yesterday evening. I picked her up and*  
昨天傍晚出院的。我接她去了公寓，并且.....我为她申请了住宿变更。从下周开始，她将住在我们隔壁。”看到美里惊讶的表情，真嗣的嘴角微微上扬，露出一

丝不易察觉的微笑。"哦，那挺好的。....." 真嗣终于意识到，还有人关心他；他们不会就这样让他独自躺在床上腐烂。"美里小姐，谢谢你。"

*sent her to the apartment. And... I requested a change of accommodation for her. She will be living next to us, starting from next week." Much to Misato's surprise, Shinji's lips lifted a little, like a very slight grin. "Oh, I guess that's good..." Shinji finally realized that there were people that still cared for him; they won't just let him rot in his bed like this. "Mi-Misato-san, thanks."*

美里微笑着说："我一直都在你身边，真嗣君。"

*Misato smiled, "I'm always here for you, Shinji-kun."*

Shinji ate his breakfast and packed up for school. He was so nervous. He didn't know whether he should, or could tell his friends about Asuka's decease. He sighed heavily and exited the apartment.

真嗣吃完了早餐，收拾好书包准备去学校。他紧张得不得了。他不知道是否应该，或者说能否告诉朋友们明日香去世的消息。他重重地叹了口气，走出了公寓。

As he was walking into the school gate, everyone looked at him weirdly. It was understandable because his image was so messy. He didn't wash his hair, and his clothes were a mess. His eyes were bloodshot, and his expression dejected. People smartly avoided him, even those girls who were constantly harassing him were afraid to try anything. He slowly got up the stairs and walked into the classroom. He saw Toji was chatting with Hikari, and Kensuke was sitting in his seat, eyes looking at his computer. Rei was still absent.

当他走进校门时，所有人都奇怪地看着他。这可以理解，因为他的形象实在太邋遢了。他没有洗头，衣服也乱糟糟的。眼睛布满血丝，表情沮丧。人们机智地避开他，就连那些经常骚扰他的女生也不敢轻举妄动。他慢慢地走上楼梯，走进教室。他看到剑介正在和光聊天，而真希波坐在自己的座位上，眼睛盯着电脑。丽依旧缺席。

"Hey, Shin-man! It's been... Whoa man, what happened? You look like a vagrant!" Toji said, a worried look on his face.

"嘿，真嗣！已经.....哇，伙计，发生什么事了？你看起来像个流浪汉！" 剑介说道，脸上带着担忧的表情。

"He's not coming to school with the Red Devil, interesting," Kensuke said, his eyes still focusing on his laptop. "It's a shame that Okinawa was raining the whole week. We didn't even get out of the hotel. And I've heard from the news that something Angel related happened near Mount Asama, man those jets flying around! I wish I could've been there to take some shots!" Kensuke said, raising his newly bought camera by his left hand.

"他不会和红魔一起来学校，有意思，" 健介说道，目光依旧集中在他的笔记本电脑上。"可惜冲绳整个星期都在下雨，我们连酒店都没出去过。而且我从新闻上听说，浅间山附近发生了与使徒有关的事件，那些飞机飞来飞去的！真希望我当时能在那里拍些照片！" 健介说着，举起了他新买的相机，左手握着。

Shinji's whole body twitched hard as he heard the nickname, noticed by the stooges and also Hikari, who was starting to worry about her best friend.

听到这个绰号，真嗣整个人猛地一颤，被跟班们注意到了，还有光，她开始担心起她最好的朋友。

"Shinji-kun, you fought an Angel?" Hikari said in a carefully low voice, "Where is... Asu... Soryu-san? Shouldn't she be with you?"

"真嗣君，你和使徒战斗了？" 光小心翼翼地低声问道，"明日...绫波同学呢？她不应该和你在一起吗？"

Shinji was biting so hard on his lips, trying to control his emotion as he heard her name. He turned around from his friends, and sobbed once. 真嗣咬紧嘴唇，努力控制着自己的情绪，当听到她的名字时。他转身离开朋友，抽泣了一声。

Both the stooges fell silent as they realized that something's not right. Hikari's heart rate had gone up a lot, she felt a heavy weight was put on her heart. "Shinji-kun... I..."

两个跟班意识到情况不对，都沉默了。光的心跳加快了许多，她感到心脏上压了沉重的负担。"真嗣君...我..."

The whole classroom had gone silent as they watched the whole exchange.

整个教室都安静了下来，他们目睹了整个过程。

Shinji broke. 真嗣崩溃了。

The rest of the class watched in dread as Shinji collapsed on his seat, head buried in his arms, sobbing uncontrollably, his mouth mumbling something.

全班同学惊恐地看着真嗣瘫坐在座位上，头埋在双臂间，无法自控地哭泣，嘴里喃喃自语着什么。

"I'm sorry... I'm sorry... Asuka... I'm sorry..."

“对不起...对不起...明日香...对不起...”

Hikari was the first one to be teared up other than Shinji. "No... She can't be..." Hikari collapsed in her seat as well, eyes looking directly in front of her. Toji, on the other hand, although he never liked the Red Devil, he still felt some sort of sadness, mostly to the state his friend was in. Kensuke was in pretty much the same situation. They felt the best thing they could do for now was to simply be there with Shinji.

光是除了真嗣外第一个流泪的人。“不.....她不可能.....”光也瘫坐在座位上，双眼直视前方。另一方面，虽然阿斯兰从未喜欢过红魔，但他仍感到一丝悲伤，主要是对朋友的状态感到难过。健介的情况也大致相同。他们觉得眼下最好的做法就是陪在真嗣身边。

After a few minutes, the Sensei came in. Hikari quickly returned to her normal composure, wiping out tears, she announced, "Rise!

几分钟后，老师进来了。光迅速恢复了常态，擦干泪水，宣布道：“起立！”

Bow! Sit!" 鞠躬！坐下！

Sensei pushed his glasses a little higher. "Class, I have an announcement to make today. As some of you may have noticed, Classmate Soryu-san is missing. She's been transferred back to Germany, and thus resigned from our class."

老师将眼镜往上推了推。“同学们，今天我有个通知要宣布。你们中有些人可能已经注意到了，Soryu 同学不见了。她已经转回德国，因此从我们班辞职了。”

Shinji felt a wave of uncontrollable rage shot up his body. After all she had done for the city, for the *humanity*, all she got is a fake announcement? What the hell? But the reasonable part of him told him that it was not Sensei's fault, since there's no way he could know the truth. So instead of giving a full face-punch to the old Sensei, he shot up from his seat and shouted, "ENOUGH!"

真嗣感到一股无法控制的怒火涌上全身。她为这座城市、为人类做了那么多，得到的却是一个虚假的通知？这算什么？但理智告诉他，这不是老师的错，因为他不可能知道真相。于是，他没有给老师一拳，而是从座位上站起来大喊：“够了！”

Everyone looked at him, some of them had fear in their eyes.  
所有人都看着他，其中一些人的眼中流露出恐惧。

"Classmate Ikari-kun, please sit down, or you can stand in the hallway..."  
“碇同学，请坐下，不然你可以站在走廊里...”

"SHE DIED FOR YOU!" Shinji turned his face directly at Sensei, and then looked around. "SHE DIED FOR ALL OF YOU! EVERY SINGLE ONE OF YOU HERE WOULD HAVE BEEN DEAD

“她为你而死！”真嗣直接转向老师，然后环顾四周。“她为你们所有人而死！这里的每一个人，如果不是她，都早已死去

ALREADY IF IT WAS NOT HER!" Shinji took a deep breath, "She... she's K.I.A. An honor... for a fighter like her. She died alongside her life's purpose..."

如果不是她！”真嗣深吸一口气，“她...她已经阵亡。对于像她这样的战士来说，这是一种荣誉。她与她一生的使命同在...”

Shinji felt extremely tired as the effect of adrenaline began to cease. He couldn't take it more. Grabbing his school bag, he strode out of the classroom, shutting the door with enough force to cause the window on the door to be shattered, much to his surprise.

随着肾上腺素的效果开始消退，真嗣感到极度疲惫。他再也承受不住了。抓起书包，他大步走出教室，用力关上门，结果门上的窗户被震碎了，这让他颇为惊讶。

"... thirty-five fifty... thirty-six hundred... thirty-six fifty..." Maya announced, "We have reached the target depth."

“...三十五五十...三十六百...三十六五十...”摩耶宣布道，“我们已经到达目标深度。”

"Attachment confirmed," Aoba said, "Whatever it is, the magnet had got it attached."

“连接确认，”青叶说，“不管是什么，磁铁已经把它吸住了。”

"Good work. Begin ascent." Ritsuko felt very nervous, 'whatever it is, it's producing an AT-Field. I fear my theory maybe actually correct...' She waited in extreme tension.

“干得好。开始上升。”律子感到非常紧张，‘无论那是什么，它正在产生 AT 力场。我担心我的理论可能真的正确.....’她在极度紧张中等待着。

Misato was also very tense. She was also worried about Shinji's first school day. She didn't really care about the leak of the status of the pilot, since they were going to have a formal funeral after all. She 美里也非常紧张。她同样担心真嗣的开学第一天。她并不太在意驾驶员状态的泄露，毕竟他们最终还是会举行正式的葬礼。她

wanted the whole world to recognize what these CHILDREN have done for them. She was more worried about whether Shinji would be able to restrain himself from getting into a fight with someone in the school. 希望全世界都能认识到这些孩子们为他们所做的一切。她更担心的是真嗣是否能在学校里克制自己，不与他人发生冲突。

"... ETA 2 minutes until the target reaches the surface." Maya's announcement snapped Misato out of her train of thought. There was no camera or whatsoever mounted on the magnet since nothing like those would stand the pressure. So the only information they had was an electronic signal given by the magnet's change in resistance, which indicates that the magnet had captured additional metal.

“.....预计目标 2 分钟后到达水面。”玛雅的公告将美里从思绪中拉回。磁铁上并未安装摄像头或其他设备，因为这些都无法承受压力。因此，他们唯一的信息来源是磁铁电阻变化发出的电子信号，这表明磁铁捕获了额外的金属。

Everyone watched the video feed nervously as the cable was being 众人紧张地注视着视频画面，随着缆绳被 pulled up. 缓缓拉起。

"Captain Katuragi, come with me. I need to check something about Unit 02." Ritsuko said. Misato nodded, and followed her out of the room.

“Katuragi 舰长，跟我来。我需要检查一下 02 号机的情况。”律子说道。美里点头，跟着她走出了房间。

The cable stopped shortening. At the end of it, was a huge chunk of metal glowing bright red, attached to a spherical magnet. The machine gently

put down the remains of Unit 02, the crew nearby quickly started cooling it down. Steam shot up to the sky. After several minutes of cooling, the temperature of the chunk of metal finally decreased to a point where the laser cutting crew was able to get nearby.

缆绳停止了缩短。尽头处，是一块巨大的金属，发出鲜亮的红光，附着在一个球形磁铁上。机器轻轻放下 02 号机的残骸，附近的船员迅速开始冷却它。蒸汽直冲云霄。经过几分钟的冷却，金属块的温度终于降到了激光切割队可以靠近的程度。

Ritsuko watched the crew using the laser to cut through the armor, to get to the position where the core should be. From her terminal, she noticed that the AT-Field has disappeared moments ago. After half an hour or so, the crew suddenly stopped working, a technician walked down the working platform, heading towards Ritsuko. "Doctor Akagi, I think you need to see this."

律子观察着船员用激光切割装甲，试图找到核心的位置。从她的终端上，她注意到 AT 力场在不久前消失了。大约半小时后，船员们突然停止了工作，一名技术人员走下工作平台，朝律子走来。“赤木博士，我想您需要看看这个。”

Ritsuko followed the technician to the working platform. "Doctor Akagi, I believe this is what you call the entry plug of Evangelion

律子跟着技术员走向工作平台。“赤木博士，我想这就是您所说的 EVA 的插入栓了。”

Units." He raised his arm, pointing to a piece of grey metal that has a 单位。" 他举起手臂，指向一块灰色金属，上面印着

big, almost unrecognizable "02" printed on it. The metal peeked out from a large cut done by the laser cutting crew, and its shape cylindrical.

一个巨大且几乎难以辨认的“02”。这块金属从激光切割团队制造的大切口中露出，其形状呈圆柱形。

The entry plug still held its cylindrical shape.

插入栓依旧保持着圆柱形状。

Just as Ritsuko was too shocked to realize that it's indeed true, Misato reacted faster. "GET BACK TO WORK! CAREFULLY CUT THE ENTRY PLUG OPEN!" She shouted as demanding as possible. She was so ready to pick up a laser cutter and start doing the job herself.

正当律子震惊得难以置信时，美里反应更快。“继续工作！小心切开插入栓！”她尽可能地大声命令。她几乎要拿起激光切割器亲自上阵了。

The crew quickly returned their position. They carefully cleared twisted metal around the cylinder, and the crane helped the chunk of metal to change its position, so that the head of the entry plug could touch the ground. Lasers shot out. Smoke rose. Everyone watched the crew nervously. Ritsuko patted Misato's shoulder, "You are aware that even if the entry plug is intact, it's been seven days without any life support, right? The oxygen should've drained on the first day already. Don't get your hopes up too much." Misato chose to ignore Rits, but she knew that she's right. There's no way a human could live without oxygen for *minutes*, not to mention the lack of food and water.

工作人员迅速回到各自岗位。他们小心翼翼地清理着圆柱周围的扭曲金属，起重机协助这块金属改变位置，使插入栓的头部能够触地。激光射出，烟雾升腾。所有人都紧张地注视着工作人员。律子轻拍美里的肩膀，“你应该知道，即便插入栓完好无损，已经七天没有任何生命维持系统了，对吧？氧气应该在第一天就耗尽了。别抱太大希望。”美里选择无视律子的话，但她明白律子是对的。人类不可能在没有氧气的环境下存活几分钟，更不用说缺乏食物和水了。

The head of the entry plug was cut open, the piece of metal that covered it fell on the ground. LCL poured out of the entry plug.

插入栓的头部被切开，覆盖其上的金属片掉落在地。LCL 从插入栓中涌出。

Misato and Ritsuko pushed the crew aside, who was having an explosive chattering, shocking expression on their faces.

美里和律子将喧闹不已、面露惊愕的机组人员推到一旁。

Misato arrived first, and peeked into the entry plug. She was astonished by what she saw, and stood still like a deer caught in the headlights, her right hand covering her mouth. Ritsuko arrived seconds later, she was also taken aback by the scene.

美里率先赶到，探头望向插入栓。她被眼前的景象惊呆了，如遭雷击般僵立原地，右手捂住嘴巴。几秒钟后，律子也赶到了，同样被这一幕所震撼。

"Wha-" "什——"

Shinji walked along the sidewalk, his schoolbag still dangling around his arm. 'I couldn't believe I just did that,' he sighed, 'But I guess if it's for



Asuka, it was worth it.' Shinji was completely expressionless. He thought that for now the only place he could go is to Rei's apartment.

真嗣沿着人行道走着，书包还挂在他的手臂上。'我简直不敢相信我刚刚那么做了，'他叹息道，'但如果是为了明日香，那也值了。'真嗣面无表情。他想，眼下唯一能去的地方就是绫波的公寓了。

Just as he walked into a small alleyway that leads to Rei's apartment, he was blocked by someone. Shinji turned around to look at the entrance of the alley, just to see a bunch of mobsters carrying baseball bats, and a knife. 'Great,' he thought, 'where's Section 2 when I actually need them?' The leading guy walked towards him, and pinned him on the wall. The mobster looked into Shinji's face, an evil grin on his face.

正当他走进通往绫波公寓的小巷时，被某人挡住了去路。真嗣转身看向巷口，只见一群手持棒球棍和刀子的暴徒。'真倒霉，'他想，'特务二课到底在哪里，我正需要他们的时候？'为首的家伙向他走来，把他按在墙上。暴徒盯着真嗣的脸，脸上露出邪恶的笑容。

"Shinji Ikari. Do you know who I am?"

“碇真嗣。你知道我是谁吗？”

Shinji looked down, finding the guy's right hand bandaged. "You are the guy who got your fingers broke by Asuka, aren't you?" He suddenly felt rage started building up again. He also felt something else that he never felt before, like an extension to him, another part of his body that he never used before.

真嗣低头一看，发现那家伙的右手缠着绷带。“你就是被明日香弄断手指的那个人，对吧？”他突然感到怒火再次升腾。他还感觉到一种从未有过的情绪，仿佛是他的一部分延伸，一个他从未使用过的身体部位。

"Yeah, smart kid," Takuma cracked another evil smile, "I wonder where is she now? Shouldn't she be always with ya? Let me tell you... when I find her, I'll enjoy that slut, in front of ya... how does that sound to ya?"

“呵，聪明的小鬼，”拓马又露出了一个邪恶的笑容，“我倒想知道她现在在哪儿？她不是应该一直和你在一起吗？让我告诉你.....等我找到她，我会当着你的面享受那个婊子.....你觉得怎么样？”

"Don't call her that." Shinji said in a dangerously low voice.

“别那样叫她。”真嗣用一种危险而低沉的声音说道。

"Heh? What are you gonna do about it, you little brat? Ha, she's so hot! I wonder what it feels like to put my dick..."

"嘿？你个小鬼能拿我怎么样？哈，她可真辣！不知道我的家伙事儿放进去是什么感觉..."

Shinji failed to control his rage. He used all his strength he thought he had to raise his right hand and punched Takuma in the face.

真嗣没能控制住自己的怒火。他用尽自己认为所有的力气，抬起右手，一拳打在了拓真的脸上。

Although he was not expecting this to work, since Takuma was much taller and masculine than him.

虽然他并不指望这一拳能奏效，毕竟拓真比他高大强壮得多。

Then he saw Takuma was sent flying leftward, his body crashed against a metal trash box meters away, the metal frame of it bent

随后他看到拓真被击飞向左侧，身体撞上了几米外的一个金属垃圾箱，垃圾箱的金属框架因此弯曲

inwards. Blood all over Takuma's face.

变形。拓真满脸是血。

Both Shinji and the mobsters around him were taken aback by the scene.

Neither of them knew that Shinji, the kid that looked so scrawny, has possessed so much power.

真嗣和周围的混混们都对这一幕感到震惊。他们谁也没想到，这个看似瘦弱的少年真嗣，竟然拥有如此强大的力量。

The mobsters hesitated at their attack.

黑帮分子们在进攻前犹豫了。

"Gods you were right... Eva pilots are a bunch of monsters..."

"天啊，你说得对.....伊娃驾驶员真是一群怪物....."

"Shut up! There're 6 of us, one of him! We will attack together and put him down!"

"闭嘴！我们六个，他一个！一起上，把他打倒！"

"No... Why Im doing this... I don't want to do this!"

"不...为什么我要这么做...我不想这么做！"

"Who are these people? Oh my gods! He has fucking bodyguards! Run!"  
"这些人是谁？我的天啊！他居然有该死的保镖！快跑！"

Shinji just stood there, his brain still processing the information. His train of thought was broken by some concentrated sound of footsteps. The Section 2 agents finally arrived, immediately scaring off the mobsters. They couldn't run faraway tho, as the agents raised their handguns directly at them.

真嗣只是站在那里，他的大脑仍在处理这些信息。他的思绪被一阵密集的脚步声打断。第二分部的特工终于赶到，立刻吓跑了那些暴徒。不过他们没能跑远，因为特工们直接举起手枪对准了他们。

"You are under arrest by attempted kidnapping of NERV employee," One of the agents said, "handcuff them and send them to the NERV Prison."  
"你因涉嫌绑架 NERV 员工而被捕，"一名特工说道，"给他们戴上手铐，送到 NERV 监狱。"

Shinji relieved, turning his head to look at Takuma. The basketball guy was still bleeding hard, but breathing. A fearful look in his eyes. Sighing, Shinji asked Section 2 to take that guy for medical care, and continued his way to Rei's apartment.

真嗣松了口气，转头看向琢磨。那个篮球小子还在大量出血，但仍有呼吸。眼中流露出恐惧的神色。叹了口气，真嗣请求第二支部将他送去接受医疗救助，然后继续前往绫波的公寓。

The atmosphere inside NERV HQ had been tense ever since Misato and Ritsuko came back.

自从美里和律子回来后，NERV 总部的气氛就一直很紧张。

"What was that?" Misato asked, "What is a Sea of Dirac?"  
"那是什么？" 美里问道，"什么是狄拉克海？"

"It's an imaginary space," Ritsuko said, "It's basically a gateway to  
"那是一个假想空间，" 律子说，"基本上是一个通往  
another Universe." 另一个宇宙的门户。"

"So you are telling me that, something or someone had transferred Asuka to somewhere else, used its AT-Field to keep the entry plug from collapsing, and sent her back after we picked Unit 02 up from the

"所以你是说，有什么东西或人把明日香转移到了别处，用 AT 力场防止插入栓崩塌，然后我们从火山中找回二号机后把她送了回来？"

"Theoretically yes, but there are a lot of details unanswered. Since only EVAs and Angels could produce an AT-Field, and Unit 02 was certainly not the one which did it..."

"理论上是的，但还有很多细节没有解答。既然只有 EVA 和使徒能产生 AT 力场，而二号机显然不是那个施救者……"

"So... an Angel from another universe saved her? That sounds... disturbing. Why would an Angel ever do that? And what about the time? How could she still be alive, seven days without oxygen, food, or water? To be honest, now I'm gonna believe it if you just tell me Asuka herself is an Angel."

"那么.....另一个世界的使徒救了她？这听起来.....令人不安。使徒为什么会这么做？还有时间问题？她怎么可能在七天没有氧气、食物或水的情况下还活着？说实话，现在就算你告诉我明日香本身就是使徒，我也会相信。"

"Probably the passage of time in that universe is different from ours. Anyway, that is my theory for now. We will ask Asuka about more  
可能那个宇宙的时间流逝与我们的不同。总之，这是我目前的理论。我们稍后会向明日香了解更多情况。

details once she woke up."

等她醒来再详细询问。

"Is it wise to immediately start to interrogate her right after her near-death? I thought we could let her rest for a few more days..." Misato sighed, getting irritated about the blonde's attitude. "I'm gonna call Shinji. He's been rotting ever since she's gone. I can't even imagine how he would act considering what I did back there."

刚从鬼门关回来就立刻审问她，这明智吗？我觉得我们可以让她再休息几天……"美里叹了口气，对金发女子的态度感到烦躁。"我要给真嗣打电话。自从她离开后，他一直无所事事。我无法想象他会如何反应，考虑到我当时的行为。"

*"Wha-" Misato was astonished to see a perfectly intact Asuka lying on her pilot's seat. She immediately entered the plug, quickly checked on her vital signs, and was more shocked than happy to find her alive. However,*

*the shock q uickly died down once the*

"什-什么-" Misato 惊愕地看到 Asuka 完好无损地躺在她的驾驶座上。她立刻进入驾驶舱，迅速检查了她的生命体征，发现她还活着，这让她震惊多于高兴。然而，当意识到这一点时，震惊很快消退了。

*realiz ation came down on her. 'She's actually alive and unscratched, and Im not dreaming,' She thought, and gave Asuka a tight embrace, tears running down her face. Ritsuko came in as well, also shocked by the fact that she was alive, but soon she started worrying about*

她意识到。'她真的活着，毫发无损，我不是在做梦，'她想，紧紧抱住 Asuka，泪水滑过脸颊。Ritsuko 也进来了，同样对 Asuka 还活着的事实感到震惊，但很快她开始担心

*something else-the source of AT-Field.*

其他事情——AT 力场的来源。

*"Mi-Misato?" Asuka murmured, "Stop... Im... suffocating." Misato q uickly loosened her hug, an apologetic and happy expression on her face. Asuka fell silent again, Misato was at first worried, but soon found out that she simply fell asleep due to tiredness.*

"美-美里?" 明日香喃喃道，"停下...我...快窒息了。" 美里迅速松开了拥抱，脸上带着歉意和喜悦的表情。明日香再次沉默，美里起初担心，但很快发现她只是因为疲惫而睡着了。

"You can't tell him yet," Ritsuko said, "We are not sure whether Asuka is clear of contamination."

"你还不能告诉他，" 律子说，"我们还不确定明日香是否完全摆脱了污染。"

Misato snorted, "Rits, she's perfectly fine. Why wouldn't you just be less formal for once? You and I both know how important this is to Shinji."

美里哼了一声，"律子，她完全没事。你就不能偶尔不那么正式吗？你我都知道这对真嗣有多重要。"

Ritsuko shook her head and exited the command deck.

律子摇了摇头，离开了指挥甲板。

Shinji stood in front of Rei's apartment, and knocked on the door. "Rei, it's me, may I come in?"

真嗣站在绫波的公寓前，敲了敲门。"绫波，是我，可以进来吗？"

"yes, Ikari-kun." Rei said in a tone that was... excited?

"好的，碇君。" 绫波用一种.....兴奋的语气说道？

Shinji pushed the door open, surprised to find a Rei who's wearing something other than the school uniform - a light blue T-shirt which matched perfectly with her hair, and a pair of short jeans. Shinji had never seen Rei like this before, and this only made her much more beautiful.

真嗣推开门，惊讶地发现丽穿着不同于校服的衣服——一件与她头发颜色完美搭配的浅蓝色 T 恤，以及一条短牛仔裤。真嗣从未见过这样的丽，这让她显得更加美丽。

"Ikari-kun," Rei said, "Im... happy to see you here." Whoa, that doesn't sound like Rei as well.

"碇君，" 丽说道，"我.....很高兴你在这里。"哇，这听起来也不像丽啊。

"Rei, Im here to check on you," Shinji was surprised at Rei's sudden talkativeness, "Are you feeling better?"

"丽，我来这里看看你，" 真嗣对丽的突然健谈感到惊讶，"你感觉好些了吗？"

"I am in perfect health; the withdrawal symptoms have been dealt with and disappeared. I... thank you for your care." Rei said, smiling a little.

"我身体状况很好；戒断症状已经处理并消失了。我.....谢谢你的关心。" 丽微笑着说。

'Good, so she can actually have emotions now,' Shinji thought, and this was one of the few things that made him actually happy ever

'太好了，她现在真的能有情感了，' 真嗣心想，这是他失去她以来为数不多让他真正感到高兴的事情之一。

since he lost her. "Rei, I... want to talk with you, I... don't feel like to talk to anybody, but I know I can talk to you, since... you... emmm... you are a good listener, and... gods you can be philosophical sometimes." Shinji chuckled, "and just call me Shinji. Please."

自从他失去她以来。"丽，我.....想和你谈谈，我.....不想和任何人说话，但我知道我可以和你谈，因为.....你.....嗯.....你是个很好的倾听者，而且.....天啊，你有时还很哲学。" 真嗣轻笑道，"就叫我真嗣吧。请。"

Rei smiled a little more, "Yes, Shinji-kun."

丽微微一笑，"是的，真嗣君。"

Shinji came into the apartment, and sat on the bed. "Rei, I've heard that you'll be living with us, right?"

真嗣走进公寓，坐在床上。"丽，我听说你要和我们一起住了，对吧？"

"Yes, Shinji-kun. Captain Katsuragi had shown a great concern for me once she saw my living condition. She immediately arranged my change of accommodation," Rei blushed a little, feeling happy about the fact that so many people cared about her, "And I don't want to live here by myself anymore. I felt... lonely." 'New emotion registered: loneliness.'

"是的，真嗣君。葛城队长看到我的居住条件后非常关心我，她立刻安排了我的住宿变更，"丽微微脸红，感到高兴，因为有这么多人关心她，"而且我也不想再一个人住在这里了。我感到...孤独。" '新情绪记录：孤独。'

"That's great! Rei, I was also feeling lonely ever since my father left me ten years ago," Shinji sighed, trying to push the bad memories off, "After... I became an EVA pilot, sometimes I didn't feel it anymore. I had you and Misato-san for company. After... Asuka... arrived, I felt... and now, she's... Im never... (sob)... gonna see her again..." Shinji trailed off, sobbing slightly.

"太好了！丽，自从十年前父亲离开我后，我也一直感到孤独，"真嗣叹息着，试图将那些糟糕的记忆推开，"在那之后...我成为了 EVA 驾驶员，有时就不再感到孤独了。我有你和美里小姐陪伴。在那之后...明日香...来了，我感到...而现在，她...我永远...（抽泣）...再也见不到她了..."真嗣渐渐哽咽，声音越来越小。

Rei frowned, since she didn't understand his words. "Shinji-kun, what did you mean by 'never?'"

丽皱起眉头，因为她不明白他的话。"真嗣君，你说的'永远'是什么意思？"

"Don't you know? That... that... she... died..." "Shinji-kun, I don't understand."

"你不知道吗？那...那...她...去世了..." "真嗣君，我不明白。"

"What do you mean that you don't understand?" Shinji suddenly raised his volume, feeling angry, "She's dead; Killed in Action! I'll never see her again!"

"你这是什么意思，你不明白吗？"真嗣突然提高了音量，感到愤怒，"她死了；阵亡了！我再也见不到她了！"

"But she's alive." Rei said, her voice still low and plain. Shinji blinked.

"Wha-what? I... I saw her die!"

"但她还活着。" 绫波说，她的声音依旧低沉平淡。真嗣眨了眨眼。"什-什么？我.....我亲眼看到她死了！"

"But when I was wandering in NERV headquarters today, I could feel the presence of her AT-Field," Rei said, sounding confused.

"但今天我在 NERV 总部徘徊时，我能感觉到她的 AT 力场，" 绫波说，听起来很困惑。

"A-AT-Field?" Shinji was much more confused than excited, 'Kaworu told me about something like everyone has their own AT-Field; I don't understand him. Isn't it true that only EVAs and Angels have AT-Fields? From my world I knew that Rei has angelic genes, maybe that's why she was able to feel other's AT-Fields?'

"A-AT 力场？" 真嗣更多的是困惑而非兴奋，'渚薰告诉我每个人都有自己的 AT 力场；我不明白他的意思。不是只有 EVA 和使徒才有 AT 力场吗？从我的世界我知道绫有使徒基因，也许这就是她能感知他人 AT 力场的原因。'

"Everyone that has a soul has an AT-Field; humans' AT-Fields are imperceptible to eyes. But her AT-Field was different than others; Hers was much stronger."

"每个拥有灵魂的人都有 AT 力场；人类的 AT 力场是肉眼无法察觉的。但她的 AT 力场与众不同；她的更为强大。"

Shinji didn't need any more explanation. He sprinted out of Rei's apartment in a blink of eyes.

真嗣不需要更多的解释。他眨眼间冲出了绫的公寓。

"As strong as an Angel," Rei said to the once again lonely apartment, "and... as strong as yours, Ikari Shinji-kun."

"如同天使般坚强，" 丽对着再次空荡荡的公寓说道，"而且.....和你一样坚强，碇真嗣君。"

The distance between the NERV headquarters and Rei's apartment was not short, but Shinji kept running. He had already kept running about 3 miles at his top speed, and he didn't feel tired. He was blaming this on the adrenaline; he didn't want to think about it further, since he had something much more important to do. 'So Asuka's alive, at least



according to Rei. But I wonder why Misato hadn't told me yet.' He quickly found an entrance to Geofront, and entered it using his NERV ID. Section 2 agents intercepted him, asking about where he wanted to go.

从 NERV 总部到丽的公寓距离并不短，但真嗣一直在奔跑。他已经以最快的速度跑了大约 3 英里，却丝毫没有感到疲惫。他将这归咎于肾上腺素的作用；他不想深究，因为他有更重要的事情要做。'至少根据丽所说，明日香还活着。但我不明白为什么美里还没告诉我。' 他很快找到了通往 Geofront 的入口，并使用他的 NERV ID 进入。第二支部的人员拦住了他，询问他要去哪里。

"NERV Headquarters!" Shinji said, "Please! I need to go there!"

"NERV 总部！" 真嗣急切地说，"拜托！我必须去那里！"

Section 2 agents nodded, and took him on the train down to the pyramid. 第二区的特工们点头示意，带着他乘坐火车前往金字塔。

Inside the train, Shinji was wandering around nervously; he felt so many emotions at once, he didn't know how to describe them. After a terribly long 45 minutes ride which felt like an eternity, they finally 在火车内，真嗣紧张地四处徘徊；他同时感受到太多情绪，以至于无法形容。经过一段漫长到仿佛永恒的 45 分钟旅程后，他们终于

reached the ground. It took another 10 minutes for them to catch a 抵达地面。又花了 10 分钟，他们才搭上一辆

bus and ride it to the pyramid.

乘公交车前往金字塔。

Shinji started running insanely again once he got off the bus. He entered the pyramid, pushing people away from his path. Just as he was about to be lost, he suddenly felt something. It was the same thing that he had felt during his encounter with Takuma; an extension of his body. And no, there was something else. Another presence beneath him. 'Is this... her AT-Field that Rei was talking about? Why am I able to sense it?' But that didn't matter that time; he quickly identified that the direction of the presence was near the First Cranial Nerve; the same room he had been to many times after the 15th Angel's attack in his timeline.

真嗣一下公交车就又开始疯狂奔跑。他挤进金字塔，推开挡路的人。就在他即将迷失方向时，突然感觉到某种东西。这与他 and 拓真相遇时感受到的相同；是他身体的一部分延伸。不，还有别的东西。在他下方，另一个存在。'这是.....丽所说

的 AT 力场吗？为什么我能感知到它？'但那时这并不重要；他迅速确定那个存在的方向靠近第一脑神经；那个他在自己时间线中第 15 使徒袭击后多次去过的房间。

He kept running towards the elevator. He kept running down the stairs. He kept running down the hallway. He kept running.

他不停地向电梯跑去。他不停地跑下楼梯。他不停地穿过走廊。他不停地奔跑。

He found Misato standing outside the First Cranial Nerve.

他发现美里站在第一脑神经外面。

Misato was shocked to see Shinji there. 'How did he know about this? No one else except me, the Commander, sub-commander, and Doctor Akagi should know about Asuka's location.' "Shinji, what are  
美里看到真嗣在那里感到震惊。'他是怎么知道的？除了我、指挥官、副指挥官和赤木博士，应该没有人知道明日香的位置。' '真嗣，你在这里做什么...'

you doing..." 你在这里做什么..."

"Get out of the way! Misato-san, I need to..." Shinji's heart nearly stopped as he heard a familiar voice coming out of the room.

"让开！美里小姐，我需要....." 真嗣的心几乎停止跳动，因为他听到房间里传来一个熟悉的声音。

"Baka-Shinji?" "笨蛋真嗣？"

AN: Annnnnd done! Has anyone seen that coming? I've put enough hints in this chapter about the true identity of Asuka and Shinji. And yes, I got the idea from a famous AsuShin Doujin. But it's not completely the same; you'll see what I mean later. LOL. The next

作者注：好啦，完成了！有人猜到这个结局吗？我在这一章里放了不少关于明日香和真嗣真实身份的暗示。没错，这个点子来自一个著名的 AsuShin 同人作品。但并不完全相同；你们之后会明白我的意思。哈哈。接下来.....

chapter will take longer to upload. Probably half a week.

章节上传需要更长时间，大概得等上半周。

---

## Chapter 7: Revelations

AN: Hi guys, this chapter is mainly for clarification, and introduces certain settings. We'll move on with the story starting from the next chapter.

Expect loads of WAFF from now on. Enjoy!

作者的话：嗨，各位，这一章主要是为了澄清一些内容并介绍特定设定。从下一章开始，我们将继续推进故事。接下来会有大量的温馨场景，敬请期待。尽情享受吧！

I do not own Evangelion. Chapter 7: Revelations

我不拥有《新世纪福音战士》。第 7 章：启示

"Baka, don't cry. Shinji, (crack) I just (crack) want you to (crack) know, that... I'm ha(crack)ppy to have you (crack) in my life... Shinji... I (CRACK)... love you..."

"笨蛋，别哭。真嗣，（咔嚓）我只是（咔嚓）想让你（咔嚓）知道，那...我很高（咔嚓）兴有你（咔嚓）在我的生活中...真嗣...我（咔嚓）...爱你..."

Asuka trailed off as she saw the video feed became static; She felt her body was being squeezed everywhere. Sighing, she lowered her sync ratio; at least in this way, she could feel less pain before her death. She could feel the immense pressure being applied on the entry plug; thanks to the near incompressible nature of LCL, the entry plug wouldn't collapse just yet. However, it's just a matter of time; the heat itself could have fried her before the metal could crush her to death, anyway. She couldn't help but started crying; after all, she fucked up the second chance even harder than the first time, and she felt guilty because she had hurt Shinji by leaving him, and she thought it was her fault.

随着视频信号变成静态，明日香的声音渐渐消失；她感到全身被紧紧挤压。叹了口气，她降低了同步率；至少这样，她在死亡前能感受到较少的痛苦。她能感觉到插入栓上施加的巨大压力；多亏了 LCL 近乎不可压缩的特性，插入栓暂时还不会坍塌。然而，这只是时间问题；无论如何，高温本身可能在金属压碎她之前就将她烤熟。她忍不住开始哭泣；毕竟，她搞砸了第二次机会，甚至比第一次更严重，而且她感到内疚，因为她离开真嗣伤害了他，她认为是自己的错。

Unit 02 kept sinking. The viscosity of magma was very high, but that didn't slow down the sinking of Unit 02 very much. As the depth increases, the pressure built up very quickly. The sound of crushing metal was becoming increasingly large. The entry plug struggled to maintain its integrity, and Asuka closed her eyes.

02 号机持续下沉。岩浆的粘稠度极高，但这并未显著减缓 02 号机的下沉速度。随着深度增加，压力迅速累积。金属被碾压的声音越来越大。驾驶舱竭力维持完整，而明日香闭上了眼睛。

Just as the bottom of the entry plug started bending inwards, Asuka suddenly felt another presence inside her; her survival instinct had 就在驾驶舱底部开始向内弯曲时，明日香突然感觉到自己体内有另一个存在；她的求生本能已经

taken over, and she refused to accept fate.

接管了一切，她拒绝接受命运的安排。

'I don't want to die... I don't want to die... I don't want to die...' Asuka shot open her eyes, which were glowing bright blue. She noticed that the imminent danger was the pressure; she raised her right hand, thinking about how she would push back against the pressure; just like what people would do if they are being squeezed, for example, a wall coming towards them.

“我不想死.....我不想死.....我不想死.....” 明日香猛地睁开双眼，眼中闪烁着明亮的蓝色光芒。她意识到迫在眉睫的危险是压力；她举起右手，思考着如何推开这股压力；就像人们在被挤压时会做的那样，比如面对一堵迎面而来的墙。

She was dumbfounded to see faint orange octagons appeared in front of her, which effectively stopped the entry plug from collapsing. 她目瞪口呆地看到面前出现了淡淡的橙色八角形，有效地阻止了插入栓的崩溃。

"What the hell?" Asuka murmured, "An AT-Field? How... I'm not an Angel, am I? Or is this the side effect of time travel?" She didn't have any urge to unite with Adam, that she was sure of; but how could she produce an AT-Field if she's not an Angel?

“搞什么鬼？” 明日香喃喃自语，“AT 力场？怎么.....我不是使徒，对吧？还是这是时间旅行的副作用？” 她确信自己没有任何与亚当融合的冲动；但如果她不是使徒，又怎么能产生 AT 力场呢？

But her logic soon took over; after all, whether she's an Angel or not, it felt good to not die, and that's what mattered most at that time. 但她的逻辑很快占据了上风；毕竟，无论她是不是天使，能不死总是件好事，而这在当时是最重要的。

Asuka's college-graduate-level-intelligent brain was running at full power once she was sure that this was real; she was still alive and not dreaming, and she was indeed producing an AT-Field to keep the entry plug from collapsing. She then thought, 'I wonder what other abilities I have; after all, if I'm really an Angel, I should have some unique abilities other than producing AT-Fields.' But she wasn't sure how she would discover them; it was her survival instinct, combined with her determination of refusal, that awoke her ability to project an AT-Field.

当碇真嗣确定这一切都是真实的后，她的高智商大脑开始全力运转；她还活着，不是在做梦，而且她确实在产生 AT 力场以防止插入栓崩溃。她随即想到，'我想知道我还有哪些能力；毕竟，如果我真的是使徒，除了产生 AT 力场外，我应该还有其他独特的能力。'但她不确定如何发现这些能力；正是她的生存本能，加上她拒绝的决心，唤醒了她投射 AT 力场的能力。

Asuka concentrated her mind; she could feel her AT-Field like an extension of her body, and she could kind of manipulate it just like using her limbs. Then she could feel something else; another extension of her body, but more distant.

碇真嗣集中精神；她能感觉到自己的 AT 力场就像身体的延伸，她可以像使用四肢一样操纵它。然后她能感觉到其他东西；身体的另一个延伸，但更遥远。

She cleared her mind since she felt the temperature around her had become increasingly intolerable. 'Great, there is another problem to deal with, and apparently my AT-Field isn't blocking the heat. So it has come to this after all.' Sighing, she closed her eyes again...

她清空思绪，因为感到周围的温度变得愈发难以忍受。'真糟糕，又是一个要解决的问题，显然我的 AT 力场挡不住这股热浪。终究还是到了这一步。'叹了口气，她再次闭上了眼睛.....

Darkness engulfed her. 黑暗吞噬了她。

Asuka opened her eyes slowly, found herself sitting inside a train. Sitting across was another Asuka; or at least someone that looked exactly like her. 明日香缓缓睁开眼睛，发现自己坐在一列火车内。对面坐着另一个明日香；或者至少是一个与她长得一模一样的人。

"Where... am I? Am I... dead? And who the hell are you? Why are you using my face?" Asuka felt more confusion than anger since what was happening was far beyond her comprehension.

"这里...是哪里？我...死了吗？还有，你到底是谁？为什么用我的脸？"明日香感到更多的是困惑而非愤怒，因为眼前的一切远远超出了她的理解范围。

"I am yourself. Or rather, I am part of you; your survival instinct. And no, you, or I rather, am not dead."

"我是你。或者更确切地说，我是你的一部分；你的生存本能。而且不，你，或者我应该说，我们并没有死。"

"What? I am I, not you! And what is this place? Am I dreaming or something?"

"什么？我是我，不是你！还有，这是什么地方？我是在做梦还是怎么的？"

"This is *our* mental world, if using 'I' sounds weird. We have saved us from imminent death; we had used a sea of Dirac to get us out of the entry plug."

"这是我们的精神世界，如果用'我'听起来很奇怪。我们已从濒死边缘救回了自己；我们利用了狄拉克之海让我们脱离插入栓。"

"Sea of Dirac? Isn't that's Leliel's thing? Does this make me Leliel in this world?" Asuka suddenly felt scared.

"狄拉克之海？那不是雷里尔的东西吗？这是否意味着在这个世界里我是雷里尔？"明日香突然感到害怕。

"No; Leliel here is still Leliel. We just happen to have its abilities; after all, we traveled to a parallel universe, and the use of the Sea of Dirac was inevitable. That's why we are able to manipulate it for our own interest."

"不；这里的雷里尔依然是雷里尔。我们只是恰好拥有它的能力；毕竟，我们穿越到了平行宇宙，使用狄拉克之海是不可避免的。这就是为什么我们能够操纵它为我们的利益服务。"

"Well, I guess that makes sense..." Asuka sighed, her brain was still processing all this information. "If I could use this portal thing, does it mean that I can go anywhere I want, right now?" 'Shinji must've been so sad to lose me... I need to see him ASAP.'

"嗯，我想这说得通....."明日香叹了口气，她的脑子还在处理这些信息。"如果我能用这个传送门，是不是意味着我现在可以去任何我想去的地方？" '真嗣一定因为我离开而很难过.....我得尽快见到他。'

"Technically yes; but it will be highly probable that we will be regarded as an Angel if we simply go back using our Angelic abilities."

“理论上是；但如果我们直接用天使般的能力回去，很可能会被视为使徒。”

"Ye, you're probably right..." Asuka said, thinking about her future, 'So now I have these Angelic powers, but I'm not tempted to unite with Adam; Of course it's FUCKING AWESOME that I possess these powers.' Asuka couldn't help but smile since now she was literally the most powerful person in the world; her ego was flying out of the sky. 'But it will be hard for the others to accept my identity; I'm not worried about Shinji, but how about Misato or NERV? I'm sure Misato would shoot me in the head without hesitation if she sees my abilities; she hates Angels so much since they killed her dad. Nah, can't let them know. At least before all Angels are defeated. After that, it will be easier for them to accept a person with Angelic powers walking around them.'

“嗯，你可能是对的……” 明日香说，思考着她的未来，‘现在我有了这些天使般的力量，但我并不想与亚当合一；当然，拥有这些力量真是他妈的太棒了。’ 明日香忍不住笑了，因为她现在无疑是世界上最强大的人；她的自信心爆棚。‘但其他人接受我的身份会很困难；我不担心真嗣，但美里或 NERV 呢？我敢肯定，如果美里看到我的能力，她会毫不犹豫地朝我开枪；她恨透了使徒，因为它们杀了她父亲。不行，不能让他们知道。至少在所有使徒被击败之前。之后，他们接受一个拥有天使力量的人在他们周围走动会容易些。’

"The threat of death was the thing that awoke our Angelic instinct, and it was... you, who saved yourself."

"死亡的威胁唤醒了我们天使的本能，而正是你，救了自己。"

"I get it, me." Asuka found it amusing to talk to herself. "I guess I'll just wait for NERV to get Unit 02 out of the volcano; after all, they will want the core back. Then I'll make up a lie about an Angel with strange abilities that saved me, considering there is such an Angel which will appear later." "我明白了，我自己。" 明日香觉得和自己对话挺有趣。"我想我会等 NERV 把二号机从火山里弄出来；毕竟，他们会想要回核心。然后我会编个谎话，说是一个拥有奇异能力的天使救了我，反正之后确实会有这样的天使出现。"

"You don't need to ask me for advice; I am you, after all. But certainly I could give you insights into your powers. And one more thing: you possess an S2 organ now. No need to eat, drink, or breathe, but you can still enjoy them."

"你不需要向我征求意见；我毕竟就是你。但当然，我可以给你关于你能力的见

解。还有一件事：你现在拥有 S2 器官了。不需要吃喝或呼吸，但你仍然可以享受它们。"

"Wunderbar. Now, how the hell could I get the fuck out here? This place feels creepy!"

"太棒了。现在，我他妈怎么才能离开这个鬼地方？这里感觉阴森森的！"

"You could do whatever you want with this place. Just concentrate; use it like using your limbs."

"你可以随心所欲地操控这个地方。只要集中精神；把它当作使用你的四肢一样。"

And Asuka did just that. She could feel the extension; and since she was aware of the extension, her control over it became more and more clear. But her brain was not used to deal with it yet; it never had to deal with something like this before. But human brains adapt

而明日香正是这样做的。她能感受到这种延伸；由于她意识到了这种延伸，她对它的控制变得越来越清晰。但她的头脑还不习惯处理这些；以前从未遇到过这样的事情。不过，人类的大脑是会适应的。

at a very rapid rate; Asuka's fast learning ability and her strong self-awareness had greatly helped her control her newly awoken powers. 以极快的速度；明日香快速学习的能力和她强烈的自我意识极大地帮助她控制了新觉醒的力量。

Ritsuko waited impatiently beside Shinji and Asuka as they were holding each other on Asuka's hospital bed. "Hey you two lovebirds, I know I'm ruining your emotional reunion here, but we still need to make sure Asuka is clear of contamination."

律子不耐烦地站在真嗣和明日香旁边，他们正紧紧相拥在明日香的病床上。

"嘿，你们这对小情侣，我知道我破坏了你们的感人重逢，但我们还需要确认明日香是否完全清除了污染。"

"What are you going to do to her?" Shinji reluctantly pulled away from the embrace, sounding irritated. "And errrr... we are not... emmm..."

"你要对她做什么？" 真嗣不情愿地从拥抱中抽身，听起来有些恼火。"而且.....呃.....我们不是.....嗯....."

Asuka blinked several times toward Shinji, who immediately got the idea and shut up.



明日香朝真嗣眨了几次眼，后者立刻会意并闭上了嘴。

"First we'll make sure she's physically okay, and then I'll give her a full brain scan to find any signs of mental contamination. After that, we'll... talk with her a little bit. Shinji, you know that it was virtually impossible that she could just come back safe and sound like this right? Sitting in an entry plug for seven days without life support should've killed her alone, not to mention the extreme heat and pressure there. We'll need to make sure that... she's not... an imposter, created by an Angel to distract us or something."

“首先我们要确认她身体无恙，然后我会给她做一个全面的大脑扫描，查找任何精神污染的迹象。之后，我们会.....和她稍微谈谈。真嗣，你知道这几乎是不可能的，对吧？在插入栓里待了七天，没有生命维持系统，光这一点就足以致命，更不用说那里的极端高温和压力了。我们需要确保.....她不是.....某个天使制造的冒牌货，用来分散我们的注意力或其他什么。”

Shinji sighed, for sure he knew that this was virtually impossible; he never thought that he would see her again. But the reality is that she was there with him, and that's enough for him. Exchanging a look with Asuka, he stood up and left the ward. "Asuka, I'll be waiting for you outside."

真嗣叹了口气，他当然知道这几乎是不可能的；他从没想过还能再见到她。但现实是她就在他身边，这对他来说已经足够了。与明日香交换了一个眼神后，他站起身离开了病房。“明日香，我在外面等你。”

Asuka smiled at him. "I know you will, Baka-Shinji."

明日香朝他笑了笑。“我就知道你会这么说，笨蛋真嗣。”

SEELE 01: "Ikari, I've been informed of the recovery of the Second Child and Unit 02's core. Unbelievable, but very appreciated. The scenario can proceed as intended."

SEELE 01: “碇，我已经得知二号适格者和二号机核心的回收情况。难以置信，但非常感谢。计划可以按原定方案进行。”

Ikari: "I'm aware of the impossibility of such occurrence, and instructed Doctor Akagi to Make sure the Second Child is not an

“碇：“我清楚这种事不可能发生，已指示赤木博士确保二号适格者不是.....”

imposter. I believe she'll do her job well."

冒牌货。我相信她会做好她的工作的。

SEELE 05: "But Unit 02 will be out of the rollout for a long period of time, you realize. The only thing recyclable now is the core."

SEELE 05: "但二号机将长时间无法投入使用，你明白的。现在唯一可回收的只有核心。"

Ikari: "That is correct. So, we still need Unit 03 and 04 to be transferred as soon as possible."

碇司令: "没错。因此，我们仍需尽快转移三号机和四号机。"

SEELE 06: "I've heard that your NERV Berlin has been building a new type of Evangelion, featuring a dual-piloting system. What do you intend to do with it, Ikari?"

SEELE 06: "我听说你们的 NERV 柏林正在制造一种新型 EVA，采用双驾驶系统。你打算用它做什么，碇？"

Ikari: "We plan to use Second and Third Children as the Pilot of Unit  
碇: "我们计划让第二和第三适格者作为零号机的驾驶员。"

D. That is, should the Second Child be clear of anomalies." SEELE 01:  
"Good. Unit 01 is too important to risk."

也就是说，前提是第二适格者没有异常。" SEELE 01: "很好。零号机太过重要，不能冒险。"

"Asuka, what was the last thing you remember before we got you out?"  
Ritsuko asked, Misato was standing right next to her.

"明日香，在我们把你救出来之前，你记得的最后一件事是什么？" 律子问道，美里就站在她旁边。

Sitting across the table, Asuka pouted. "Well, I remembered hot, and being squeezed. I guess the link between me and my EVA wasn't severed at that time. Then I felt a strange sensation, something dark engulfed me. And I was in somewhere totally dark, I thought I was dead. And then... I think I heard someone talking to me."

坐在桌子对面，明日香噘着嘴。"嗯，我记得很热，还被挤压着。我想那时我和我的 EVA 之间的连接还没有断开。然后我感到一种奇怪的感觉，某种黑暗吞噬了我。我在一个完全黑暗的地方，我以为我死了。然后.....我想我听到有人在跟我说话。"

Ritsuko frowned. 'So it was probably a real Angel who saved her. But what for? Shouldn't Angels be more than happy to kill one of our pilots? But

the brain scan tells me nothing is wrong with her, and the DNA test perfectly matches our reserved samples as well.' "Asuka, what did it say to you? This can be very important for me to discover what really happened."

律子皱起眉头。 '所以很可能是一个真正的天使救了她。但为什么呢？天使不应该很乐意杀死我们的一名驾驶员吗？但脑部扫描显示她一切正常，DNA 测试也与我们的备用样本完全匹配。' "明日香，它对你说了什么？这对我发现真相非常重要。"

"Well, I think it told me something about it's lonely. Like it saved me

"嗯，我觉得它告诉了我一些关于它孤独的事情。就像它救了我"

so that it could have me all by itself. It was... using me as a  
这样它就可以独自拥有我。它.....把我当作了

company." Asuka said, keeping her tone as plain as possible. "Well, then how did you get out?"

陪伴。" 明日香说，尽量保持语气平淡。 "那么，你是怎么逃出来的？"

"I don't remember ever getting out; I thought I was dreaming. And suddenly I woke up, and found myself inside the entry plug, hugged tightly by Misato. And she nearly suffocated me!" Asuka shot a glare at Misato, who returned an apologetic look.

"我不记得曾经出来过；我以为自己在做梦。然后突然间我醒了，发现自己坐在驾驶舱里，被美里紧紧抱住。她差点把我闷死！" 明日香瞪了美里一眼，美里则回以歉意的表情。

"Interesting..." Ritsuko frowned. 'Asuka's testimony is close enough to my observation. But I still don't understand why the Angel just decided to give her back to us.' "Okay, That's good for now. Do you have any questions?" "有意思....." 律子皱眉。'明日香的证词与我的观察相当吻合。但我仍然不明白为什么使徒会决定把她还给我们。' "好吧，目前就这样。你有什么问题吗？"

"Yeah of course, like when can I go back home?!" Asuka said angrily, "I'm getting sick of this place!"

"当然有，比如我什么时候能回家？！" 明日香生气地说，"我受够这个地方了！"

"Are you so in a hurry to see Shin-chan?" Misato teased, "It's impressive to see you two have come so far in just three weeks..."

"你这么急着见新之助吗？" 美里打趣道，"短短三周你们俩就发展到这个地步，真是让人刮目相看啊....."

"MISATO!" Asuka's face blushed hard. "I just realized how much I like him after I thought I lost him forever... and thanks to me dying, Shinji apparently realized how much I meant to him as well!"

"美里！" 明日香的脸涨得通红。"我只是在我以为永远失去他之后，才意识到自己有多喜欢他.....而且多亏了我死去，真嗣显然也意识到了我对他有多重要！"

"Asuka, you can go back to the apartment very soon. But you'll be staying home for a few days. We still need to clear things up, since your file was deactivated, and you were registered... K.I.A. NERV Berlin has been informed as well. And I believe your friends at school think you are dead as well. So it'll take time to make things back to normal."

"明日香，你很快就可以回公寓了。但你要在家待几天。我们还需要理清一些事情，因为你的档案被停用了，而且你被登记为.....NERV 柏林分部也已被告知。我想你的学校朋友们也以为你已经死了。所以要让一切恢复正常还需要时间。"

"Well, fair enough I guess... I mean, I thought I was dead as well..." Asuka trailed off, her expression was sad.

"嗯，我想这也算公平吧.....我的意思是，我也以为自己死了....." 明日香的声音渐渐低了下去，脸上带着悲伤的表情。

Shinji jumped from his seat once he heard the door of the interrogation room was opened. "Asuka!" He cried in joy as he saw a familiar redhead walking out of the room.

真嗣一听到审讯室的门被打开，就从座位上跳了起来。"明日香！" 他欣喜若狂地喊道，看到一个熟悉的红发女孩从房间里走出来。

"Hi, Shinji. They say I can go home tonight, and... I want a big welcome back from death meal!" Asuka said; her smile beautiful and sincere.

"嗨，真嗣。他们说今晚可以回家了，而且.....我想要一顿盛大的重生欢迎餐！" 明日香说道，她的笑容美丽而真诚。

"Sure thing, Asuka." Shinji said, "I'm just glad to have you back. During those days when I thought I lost you, I was literally rotting in my bed. It was the news that Rei... she'll live with us now... that knocked me out of deep depression."

"当然，明日香。" 真嗣说道，"我只是很高兴你能回来。在那段我以为失去你的日

子里，我几乎在床上腐烂了。是丽.....她现在要和我们一起生活.....这个消息把我从深深的抑郁中拉了出来。"

"So Rei will live next to us? That's good to hear. No one should ever live in that dump!"

"所以丽要住在我们隔壁？这真是个好消息。没有人应该住在那种破地方！"

"Yeah... I should've helped her earlier... and Asuka, you may be mad at me for this, but I told..." Shinji trailed off, afraid that Asuka would hate him for telling her friends that she died.

"是啊.....我早该帮她的.....还有，明日香，你可能会因此生我的气，但我告诉了....." 真嗣话没说完，担心明日香会因为他告诉朋友们她去世的消息而恨他。"

"It's okay, Shinji. Im not blaming on you. Heck, I myself thought I was dead. Now I couldn't help but be curious about the look Hikari will show once she sees me..." Asuka giggled but soon stopped as she found it inadequate to joke about something so serious. After all, Hikari was her friend. "So, what exactly did you tell them?"

"没事的，真嗣。我没有怪你。说真的，我自己也以为我已经死了。现在我忍不住好奇，当光看到我时会是什么表情....." 明日香轻笑出声，但很快意识到在这种严肃的事情上开玩笑不合适。毕竟，光是她的朋友。"那么，你到底告诉他们什么了？"

"Well, I was crying over the table, and they figured it out by themselves. And then Sensei came in, he told the class that you were transferred back to Germany. I... I couldn't believe that after all that you've done for them, what you got was a fake announcement, so I had an outburst, yelled at Sensei, told the whole class that you died for them... and then I ran out of the class..."

"嗯，我当时趴在桌上哭泣，他们自己猜出来的。然后老师进来了，他告诉全班你被转回德国了。我.....我无法相信，你为他们做了那么多，得到的却是一个虚假的通知，所以我情绪失控，对老师大喊大叫，告诉全班你为了他们而死.....然后我就跑出了教室....."

Asuka was actually impressed. She never thought Shinji would go so far as yelling at Sensei and everyone in the class to just defend her effort, much less skip the school for it. 'That's the spirit I knew you've always had, Shinji.'

明日香其实很感动。她从未想过真嗣会为了维护她的努力，不惜对老师和全班人大喊大叫，甚至为此逃学。‘这就是我一直知道的你，真嗣。’

Hikari was in a bad mood today. Shinji had just told her two days ago that Asuka, her best friend, had been Killed in Action. The whole class was quieter than before. Shinji was still absent; so was Rei.

光今天心情很糟。真嗣两天前才告诉她，她最好的朋友明日香在行动中牺牲了。整个班级比以前安静了许多。真嗣仍然缺席；丽也是。

This got Hikari worried. She decided to check on Shinji with the Stooges after school.

这让光感到担忧。她决定放学后和三傻一起去看看真嗣。

"Hey Toji, Hey Kensuke." Hikari intercepted the Stooges at the school gate.

"Im going to check on Shinji-kun today. Would you like to come with me?"

“嘿，阿薰，嘿，健介。”光在学校门口拦住了三傻。“我今天要去看看真嗣君。你们想和我一起去吗？”

"Great class rep, cuz we were just thinking about the same thing." Toji smiled, "We care about Shin-man as well. I mean, I never liked the Red... Soryu-san before, but knowing that she..fought for me, for us, I feel kinda sorry for her..."

“真是个好班长，因为我们刚才也在想同样的事。”冬二笑了笑，“我们也很关心真嗣。我的意思是，我以前从不喜欢赤木.....律子小姐，但得知她.....为了我，为了我们而战斗，我有点为她感到难过.....”

"Yeah, Toji. I agree with you. I mean, without her and Shinji the class seemed so quiet." Kensuke said.

“是啊，冬二。我同意你的看法。我的意思是，没有她和真嗣，班级显得太安静了。”剑介说道。

Having made an agreement, the three of them started walking towards Shinji's apartment. No one said anything during the walk, as they were immersed in their own thoughts. Soon they arrived at the building, and were more confused than surprised to find Ayanami also there.

达成共识后，三人开始向真嗣的公寓走去。一路上谁也没有说话，他们都沉浸在自己的思绪中。不久他们到达了那栋楼，看到绫波也在那里，他们更多的是困惑而非惊讶。

"Hello Ayanami-san, are you here to check on Shinji-kun as well?" Hikari greeted.

"你好，绫波同学，你也是来看望真嗣的吗？" 洞木光问候道。

"Yes, Horaki-san," Rei replied, "and tomorrow will be the first day of me living here."

"是的，洞木同学，" 绫波零回答，"明天将是我住在这里的第一天。"

"That's good for you, Ayanami-san," Hikari smiled, "I bet Shinji-kun's in great need of company now."

"那对你来说真好，绫波同学，" 洞木光微笑着说，"我敢说真嗣现在非常需要陪伴。"

"Shinji-kun and Soryu-san were very close to each other. I do not think I could replace her as his romantic partner." Rei said plainly.

"真嗣君和惣流小姐关系非常亲密。我认为自己无法取代她成为他的恋人。" 绫波淡淡地说道。

Hikari, Toji, and Kensuke all blinked. "Ayanami-san, was... was that a joke?" 日香、剑介和真希波都眨了眨眼。"绫波同学，那.....那是开玩笑吗？"

Rei chuckled, "Was it funny? I was trying to lighten the mood since I have noticed that you all have sad looks on your faces."

绫波轻笑道，"有趣吗？我试图缓和气氛，因为我注意到你们脸上都有悲伤的表情。"

This time the three people actually giggled. "Good one, Ayanami-san."

Toji said, "Shin-man and the Red Devil? Ha, I'll bet my Air

"这次三个人真的笑出声来。"说得好，绫波同学。" 冬二说道，"真嗣和红魔？哈，我敢打赌我的飞机。"

Jordans to..."

"Suzuhara! Stop it! It's very inappropriate to say something like this behind people, especially when they are... never mind! Ayanami-san, let's go visit Shinji-kun now, alright?"

"铃原！别说了！在背后说这种话很不合适，尤其是当他们.....算了！绫波同学，我们现在去看看真嗣，好吗？"

"Yes." Rei said, "Please follow me."

"好的。" 绫波说，"请跟我来。"

They entered the elevator and waited. After a Ding, they exited the elevator, and walked towards the Katsuragi Residence.

他们进入电梯并等待着。随着一声“叮”，他们走出电梯，向着葛城宅邸走去。

All four people stood in front of the door, three of them extremely nervous. Hikari pressed the doorbell, and heard a familiar voice saying "Coming!". But the three of them didn't recognize the voice at once; their brain ruled out a certain possibility automatically. Rei suddenly said, "It's good to have you visit Shinji-kun and Soryu-san here with me. I appreciate your company."

四人站在门前，其中三人极度紧张。光按下门铃，听到一个熟悉的声音说“来了！”。但那三人一时没认出这声音；他们的大脑自动排除了某种可能性。零突然说道：“真高兴你们能来拜访真嗣君和惣流小姐，有你们在真好。”

Toji, Kensuke, and Hikari blinked. "Visit Soryu-san? Ah, Rei, do you mean It's her memorial?"

东治、健介和光眨了眨眼。“拜访惣流小姐？啊，零，你是说她的纪念仪式吗？”

Rei suddenly realized why the three of them were acting like before. Just as she was about to give them a warning, the door hissed open, and all of Hikari, Toji, and Kensuke's questions were answered.

丽突然意识到为什么他们三个表现得像之前那样。正当她准备给他们一个警告时，门嘶嘶地打开了，光、东治和真嗣的所有疑问都得到了解答。

Asuka, wearing a yellow T-shirt and a pair of blue short shorts, was standing right in front of them.

明日香穿着一件黄色T恤和一条蓝色短裤，就站在他们面前。

There were 5 seconds of total silence, as they were simply staring at each other.

有五秒钟的时间，他们只是互相凝视着，完全沉默。

Toji reacted first. "GHOOOOOOOOOOOOST!" He yelled out loud, the whole building shook as he was so stunned to the extent that his brain completely shut down, his reflex taking over.

冬二最先反应过来。“鬼—————啊！”他大声喊叫，整个建筑都为之震动，他被惊吓到大脑完全宕机，本能反应接管了一切。



Kensuke simply rolled his eyes and fell.

剑介只是翻了个白眼，然后倒下了。

Hikari, on the other hand, was more shocked than happy to see Asuka, safe and sound, unscratched, standing right in front of her. She slowly raised her right hand, and caressed Asuka's left cheek. Asuka's face twitched at contact, but she quickly raised her both hands, and took hold of Hikari's left hand.

另一方面，光看到毫发无损、安然无恙站在自己面前的明日香，既震惊又高兴。她缓缓举起右手，轻抚明日香的左脸颊。明日香在接触的瞬间面部抽搐了一下，但她很快举起双手，握住了光的左手。

"Asu... ka?" Hikari murmured. Toji fell on his butt as well, simply staring at the Red Ghost.

"Asu... ka?" 光喃喃道。剑介也一屁股坐了下来，只是呆呆地盯着红鬼。

"Gah, what an anticlimax way to meet you guys." Asuka said, "Yes, Hikari, It's me. The great Soryu Asuka Langley. Annnnnd Im not a ghost, Jock Stoooge! I guess Im just too hard to get rid of! Apparently Satan was scared by the Red Devil and threw me right back! Ha!" Asuka said, smiling.

"啊，真是虎头蛇尾的见面方式。" 明日香说道，"是的，光，是我。伟大的惣流·明日香·兰格雷。而且我不是鬼魂，傻大个！看来我真是难以摆脱！显然撒旦被红魔吓到了，直接把我扔了回来！哈！" 明日香笑着说。

Hikari finally recovered from the shock and her logic took over. She lashed forward and gave Asuka a tight embrace. Asuka was more than happy to return it.

光终于从震惊中恢复过来，逻辑占据了上风。她猛地冲上前去，紧紧抱住了明日香。明日香也非常乐意回抱她。

"Asuka... It's really you... Im glad you're okay... Shinji-kun said that you... you..." Hikari trailed off with a sob.

"明日香...真的是你...太好了，你没事...真嗣君说你...你..." 光子哽咽着说不出话来。

"Ah, he's just a Baka. He got too emotional and outed the wrong info to you!" Asuka said, "Now, lets get inside. That Baka is making some dinner. Not as good as the welcome home one, but still good. I can ask him to prepare for more people if you guys are willing to stay here for dinner!"

“啊，他就是个笨蛋。他太情绪化了，把错误的信息告诉你！”明日香说道，“现在，我们进去吧。那个笨蛋在做晚饭。虽然没有欢迎回家的那顿好，但也不错。如果你们愿意留下来吃晚饭，我可以让他多准备些！”

"I'd love to, Asuka-chan." Hikari smiled widely, tears in her eyes. She looked back at Toji and Kensuke, the former had just stood up, while the latter was still lying on the ground. Sighing, Asuka helped them to get Kensuke inside.

“我很愿意，明日香酱。”光子笑着，眼中含泪。她回头看向东治和健介，前者刚刚站起来，而后者还躺在地上。明日香叹了口气，帮他们把健介扶进屋内。

"... I killed the Angel, but it severed my cable and I began falling down. Baka-Shinji went after me, but I was too deep for him to reach in time. And... just as I thought I was about to die, something happened to me and I was teleported out. And... I think I fell asleep.

.....我杀死了使徒，但它切断了我的缆绳，我开始坠落。笨蛋真嗣试图追上我，但我下坠得太深，他来不及赶到。而.....就在我以为自己快要死去时，某种变化发生在我身上，我被传送了出去。然后.....我想我是睡着了。

Then I woke up in the entry plug, Misato hugging me tightly." Asuka was telling her story to her friends enthusiastically. Toji and Kensuke were just recovering from the shock, but Hikari was very excited to listen how her friend had killed an Angel and came back from near death.

然后我在插入栓里醒来，美里紧紧抱着我。”明日香正热情地向她的朋友们讲述她的经历。剑介和冬二刚从震惊中恢复过来，但光却非常兴奋地听着她的朋友如何杀死使徒并从死亡边缘归来。

"Wow, that sounds... cool. Asuka, we were all so sad to hear that... emmm, but now I'm just soooo happy to see you fine! And god damn Shinji yelled at Sensei like a maniac... but it was awesome!" Hikari said, smiling.

“哇，听起来.....真酷。明日香，我们听说.....呃，但现在看到你安然无恙，我真是太高兴了！而且天哪，真嗣对老师大吼大叫像个疯子.....但那真是太棒了！”光笑着说。

"Yeah, yeah, that Baka just couldn't... woooooo that smells sooooo goooooood, Shinji!" A strong smell of delicious food came out of the kitchen.

“是啊，是啊，那个笨蛋就是不行.....哇哦哦，这味道真是太香了，真嗣！”一股诱人的美食香气从厨房飘了出来。

"Ah, Asuka, I'm making some... I believe it's called Sauerbraten, and pancakes. It's almost done. I'm serving the pancakes now." Shinji said, carrying three pancakes at a time, and served all six people with delicious pancakes.

"啊，明日香，我在做一种.....我想是叫醋焖牛肉，还有煎饼。快好了。我现在就上煎饼。" 真嗣说道，一次端着三张煎饼，给六个人都端上了美味的煎饼。

"Wunderbar. I like German food!" Asuka exclaimed. Shinji smiled, "Asuka, as long as you like it, then I can make it."

"太棒了。我喜欢德国菜！" 明日香欢呼道。真嗣微笑着说："明日香，只要你喜欢，我就可以做。"

"Jeez, Shin-man, you guys sound like a couple," Toji said with a smirk.

"天哪，真嗣，你们听起来就像一对儿。" 冬二带着一丝坏笑说道。

Both Asuka and Shinji blushed, "Shut up, Toji!" They said in unison.

明日香和真嗣都脸红了，"闭嘴，冬二！" 他们异口同声地说道。

"But you guys look so cute together!" Hikari said, "You should totally go on a date."

"但你们俩站在一起真的很可爱！" 光子说道，"你们绝对应该去约会。"

"Well, it's not like... we haven't... yet..." Shinji stammered.

"嗯，也不是说.....我们还没.....呢....." 真嗣结结巴巴地说。

"Shinji! Let's go get some sodas from the grocery store! We'll be right back!" Asuka interrupted Shinji and stood up, grabbing his wrist and dragged him out of the apartment. Hikari, Toji, Kensuke, and Rei exchanged knowing looks, and continued eating their food.

"真嗣！我们去杂货店买些汽水吧！马上就回来！" 明日香打断真嗣，站起身来，抓住他的手腕，把他拖出了公寓。光、剑介、肯兹和丽交换了一个心照不宣的眼神，继续吃他们的食物。

"... Asuka! Slow down!" Shinji was barely catching up with Asuka, and he was wondering what was so important that Asuka had to drag him out of the apartment and discuss alone.

".....明日香！慢点！" 真嗣勉强跟上明日香，心里纳闷到底有什么重要的事，明日香非得把他从公寓里拖出来单独讨论。

Asuka found an alleyway and signaled Shinji to follow. Once they were sure that no one was watching them, Asuka turned around to face Shinji, "Shinji, I... I want to ask you something. And... I want to tell you something."

绫波找到了一条小巷，示意真嗣跟上。确认周围无人监视后，绫波转身面对真嗣，"真嗣，我...我有件事想问你。而且...我也有话要告诉你。"

Shinji felt a chill ran down his spine. He had never seen Asuka's expression looked so serious, and her eyes were saying that she was afraid. "Yes, Asuka. What... do you want to know?"

真嗣感到一阵寒意沿着脊背而下。他从未见过绫波的表情如此严肃，她的眼神透露出恐惧。"是的，绫波。你想...知道什么？"

"... Shinji, you said in that volcano, that... you... need me, you can't lose me. What did you mean by that?"

"...真嗣，你在那座火山里说，你...需要我，你不能失去我。你那话是什么意思？"

Shinji was taken aback by the question. "Wha... I mean exactly what they sound like, Asuka. I don't want to lose you; like I said, you are important to me."

真嗣被这个问题吓了一跳。"什...我是说，就像它们听起来那样，明日香。我不想失去你；就像我说的，你对我很重要。"

"But we've only met each other for about three weeks that time, yet you sounded like I was the most important person to you."

"但我们那时只认识了大约三周，你却表现得好像我是你最重要的人一样。"

Shinji blinked. 'Why did she say that? Was she trying to trick me into something?' "Asuka, I... errr, I didn't know how much I... wanted from you, how much I needed you, until I thought I was about to lose you forever. It was... I don't know, Asuka. I thought you are better than me at dealing with emotions." 'How can I tell her that I fell in love with her for months already?'

真嗣眨了眨眼。'她为什么这么说？她是不是想骗我什么？' "明日香，我... 呃，我不知道我...从你那里想要多少，我有多需要你，直到我以为我快要永远失去你了。那是...我不知道，明日香。我以为你在处理情感方面比我强。" '我该怎么告诉她我已经爱上她好几个月了？'

Asuka swallowed, "Shinji... let's put it in this way. Do you... like me?"

明日香咽了咽口水， “真嗣...这么说吧。你...喜欢我吗？ ”

'That's the answer she's been waiting for. I knew it.' "Asuka, of course I like you! I think... emmm, I like you in a way that's different from Rei, or Misato, or Toji and Kensuke... If you know what I mean..."

“那是她一直在等待的答案。我就知道。” “明日香，我当然喜欢你！我觉得... 嗯，我对你的喜欢和丽、美里、或是剑介和真希波他们不一样...如果你明白我的意思...”

Asuka smiled widely. "Good to hear, Shinji. And... I like you too." Asuka blushed. 'Wonderbar, it seems like me and Shinji will be together much earlier this time.'

"明日香笑得十分灿烂。 “很高兴听到你这么说，真嗣。而且...我也喜欢你。” 明日香脸红了。 ‘太好了，看来这次我和真嗣会在一起得更早。’ ”

Shinji smiled as well, "Asuka, Im glad to hear that. I... we... are we, 真嗣也笑了， “明日香，听到你这么说我很高兴。我.....我们.....我们是， ”

*that thing* now?" 那东西现在？ "

"Ahem, maybe. Now, let's get some sodas and do back home. I still

"咳咳，也许吧。现在，我们去买点汽水然后回家。我还有

have something to tell you later."

待会儿有话要告诉你。

Shinji got out of the shower and went straight into his room. Singing, he closed the door, laid down on his bed, and started listening to his SDAT. Suddenly the door was slid open, Asuka standing right there. "Shinji, Misato's not coming home tonight. That leaves two of us alone here. And... I still have something to tell you. Now, get up and meet me in the dining room."

真嗣洗完澡，径直走进自己的房间。他一边唱歌，一边关上门，躺在床上开始听他的 SDAT。突然，门被拉开，明日香就站在那里。 “真嗣，美里今晚不回家。这里只剩下我们两个人。而且.....我还有话要告诉你。现在，起来，到餐厅见我。 ”

"Ah yeah, sure." Shinji got up and walked to the dining area, Asuka sitting on a chair around the table, her finger tapping the table. Shinji found

another chair and sat down. "Asuka, what is it?"

“啊，好的，当然。”真嗣起身走向餐厅，明日香坐在桌旁的一把椅子上，手指轻敲着桌面。真嗣找到另一把椅子坐下。“明日香，什么事？”

Asuka swallowed hard, "Shinji... promise me first... that you won't hate me... no matter what I tell you..."

明日香艰难地咽了咽口水，“真嗣...你先答应我...无论我告诉你什么...你都不会恨我...”

Shinji coughed, "Wow Asuka, you sound so serious... I promise you Asuka, I won't hate you. I said I... really like you. And I won't leave you."

真嗣咳嗽了一声，“哇，明日香，你听起来好严肃...我答应你，明日香，我不会恨你。我说过我...真的很喜欢你。我不会离开你的。”

Asuka made a weak smile. "It's a good thing that I trust you, Baka." She took a deep breath, "Shinji, listen carefully. I... I think... I... am... I have the... power of Angels."

明日香露出了一个虚弱的微笑。“还好我信任你，笨蛋。”她深吸了一口气，“真嗣，仔细听好。我...我觉得...我...是...我有天使的力量。”

Shinji blinked. He couldn't believe what he had just heard. Asuka, on the other hand, her face darkened as she saw the look on Shinji's face. "Listen Shinji, I... I'm not going to hurt you! I... I'm not going to do what Angels do! Im not an Angel! Please Shinji... don't leave

"真嗣眨了眨眼。他无法相信自己刚刚听到的话。另一方面，明日香看到真嗣脸上的表情，脸色阴沉下来。“听着，真嗣，我.....我不会伤害你的！我.....我不会做使徒做的事！我不是使徒！请真嗣.....不要离开我。”

me..."

Shinji swallowed hard, and took a deep breath. He reached out his hand to grab Asuka's who immediately returned with a death grip. "Asuka, I don't hate you, and I won't leave you, even if you are... and you are not, that Im sure of." 'What the hell was that? Asuka has Angelic powers? That's something completely new to me. And I guess that's the real reason she came out of the volcano unscratched. And speaking of Angelic powers, I... Im afraid that I also have them, since I could feel the presence of other's AT-Field, and that also explains why I just don't get tired, or I was able to beat the Takuma jerk like flipping a coin.' "Asuka, I... listen to me, you just

said something very secret to me. And I think I should tell you something as well." Seeing the expression on Asuka's face had softened, Shinji took another deep breath. "Asuka... Im... errr... from the future."

真嗣艰难地咽了口唾沫，深吸了一口气。他伸出手去握住明日香的手，后者立刻以死死的力量回应。“明日香，我不恨你，也不会离开你，即使你是.....而你不是，这一点我确信。” ‘那是什么鬼？明日香有使徒般的力量？这对我来说完全是新事物。我想这就是她从火山中毫发无损出来的真正原因。说到使徒般的力量，我.....我害怕自己也拥有它们，因为我能感受到其他人的 AT 力场，这也解释了为什么我不会感到疲惫，或者我能像翻硬币一样打败那个高马尾的混蛋。’ “明日香，我.....听着，你刚刚告诉了我一个非常秘密的事情。我想我也应该告诉你一些事情。” 看到明日香脸上的表情变得柔和，真嗣又深吸了一口气。“明日香.....我.....呃.....来自未来。”

Asuka gasped. 'Wait, he's from the future? Just like me? Well that explains a lot of things... like why we were already so synced the first day we met... and does this mean that he has Angelic powers like me as well?' "Shinji... if what you said is true, then I believe you should also have Angelic powers, since... Im just like you."

明日香倒抽一口气。‘等等，他是来自未来？就像我一样？那倒是解释了很多事情.....比如为什么我们第一天见面就如此默契.....这是否意味着他也像我一样拥有天使般的力量？’ ‘真嗣.....如果你说的是真的，那么我相信你也应该拥有天使般的力量，因为.....我和你一样。’

Shinji wasn't surprised anymore; he had already half-expected it. "Ha... what does that make us into? Two time travelers, just to meet another in the same universe, and..."

真嗣不再感到惊讶；他早已有所预料。‘哈.....那我们算什么？两个时空旅行者，只是为了在这个宇宙中相遇，而且.....’

"Shinji, now I get it all! You love me now because in your world, you've been in love with me already!" Asuka giggled, "Aw, how romantic..."

‘真嗣，现在我全明白了！你现在爱我是因为在你的世界里，你已经爱上了我！’ 明日香咯咯笑道，‘啊，多么浪漫.....’

Shinji also smiled, "exactly, Asuka. Ive been in love with you for months. Now I guess this means that you've been in love with me for a while as well?"

“没错，明日香。我已经爱上你好几个月了。现在看来，你也已经爱我一段时间了吧？”

"Ahem, of course, Baka-Shinji!" Asuka smiled, "Oh gods, these things happened so fast... I think this is enough for today, Baka- Shinji. I want to go to sleep." She stood up and grabbed Shinji's wrist, walking directly into her room.

“咳咳，当然，笨蛋真嗣！”明日香微笑着说，“哦，天哪，这些事情发生得太快了.....我想今天已经够了，笨蛋真嗣。我想去睡觉了。”她站起身，抓住真嗣的手腕，径直走进自己的房间。

"Asuka, what are you doing?"

“明日香，你在做什么？”

"Anta Baka? We'll sleep together, can't you see? I mean, we've been doing this for months already! And I don't treat you differently from my Shinji!"  
"你傻吗？我们会一起睡，你看不出来吗？我的意思是，我们已经这样好几个月了！而且我对你的态度和对待真嗣没什么不同！"

Shinji sighed, "I love you, Asuka. But it's not like we can just do whatever we want. What if Misato sees us tomorrow? Maybe she'll separate us, 'you are still teenagers' and all that!"

真嗣叹了口气，“我爱你，明日香。但我们不能随心所欲。如果美里明天看到我们怎么办？也许她会把我们分开，说什么‘你们还是青少年’之类的！”

"I don't care about what others think! I only want you, Shinji. I... lost you before, and I don't want to lose you again! I... I want all of you! You... we are the only ones who could understand each other!"

"我不在乎别人怎么想！我只想要你，真嗣。我...曾经失去过你，我不想再失去你一次！我...我想要你的全部！你...我们才是唯一能理解彼此的人！”

"You have a point, Asuka. But it's not like I'm going anywhere; I also want to be with you. But first, we'll need to make people actually believe that we indeed love each other, right? Not just some horny teens seeking pleasure or something."

"你说得有道理，明日香。但我也不会离开；我也想和你在一起。不过首先，我们需要让人们真正相信我们是真心相爱，对吧？不仅仅是两个寻求刺激的青春少年什么的。”



"Yeah, you're probably right..." Asuka sighed, "We'll need to make this more believable. After all, in this world we've only known each other for a month. Annnd... It's still so hard to believe that we... emmm, just happen to be in the same universe, right?"

"是啊，你大概是对的....." 明日香叹了口气，"我们需要让这一切更可信。毕竟，在这个世界里我们才认识了一个月。而且.....还是很难相信我们.....呃，竟然恰好处于同一个宇宙，对吧？"

"Asuka, I think we can talk about more details tomorrow. We both need to digest this information, don't we?"

"明日香，我觉得我们可以明天再详细讨论。我们都需要时间消化这些信息，不是吗？"

"Of course I do, Baka. You can go sleep now."

"当然啦，笨蛋。你现在可以去睡觉了。"

"So... I guess I'll go sleep in my room?" Shinji said, "Emmm, actually... I think there's one thing we could do right now."

"那么...我想我该回房间睡觉了？" 真嗣说，"嗯，其实...我觉得我们现在可以做一件事。"

Shinji leaned forward, and Asuka immediately understood him and pulled him close. Their lips met. Asuka hugged Shinji tight, who was more than happy to return it. Their tongues deep into each other's mouths, enjoying the sensation created by electronic pulses running through their bodies. They also enjoyed the sensation of their bodies pressed together, feeling so warm and comfortable. After 10 minutes

真嗣向前倾身，明日香立刻明白了他的意图，将他拉近。他们的唇相触。明日香紧紧抱住真嗣，真嗣也欣然回应。他们的舌头深入对方的口中，享受着电子脉冲在体内流动带来的感觉。他们还享受着彼此身体紧贴的温暖和舒适。十分钟后

or so, they finally reluctantly pulled back, both blushing and breathing hard.

终于，他们不情愿地分开，两人都脸颊泛红，呼吸急促。

"Wow... I didn't know that I've missed those so much..." Shinji said, satisfaction on his face.

"哇...我没想到我会这么想念这些..." 真嗣说道，脸上满是满足。

"Me too, Baka. And I'm also looking forward to cuddles. I've missed those hard. I never had any nightmares when sleeping next to you, Shinji." Asuka walked into her room, closing the door. "And goodnight, my dearest Baka."

"我也是，笨蛋。而且我也期待着拥抱。我真的很想念那些。和你一起睡的时候，我从来没有做过噩梦，真嗣。" 明日香走进她的房间，关上了门。"晚安，我最亲爱的笨蛋。"

"Ja mein Liebling. Guten Nacht."

"好的，亲爱的。晚安。"

Rei watched the movers packing up her stuff and loading them into a truck. Today was the day that she'll be moving into the apartment next to Katsuragi Residence. Although she was looking forward to it, she couldn't help but feel a little bit nervous, due to the fact that she could feel Asuka and Shinji's AT-Fields like the Angels. 'Observation: Asuka and Shinji both possess AT-Fields as strong as an Angel.

丽看着搬家工人打包她的物品并装上卡车。今天，她将搬进葛城家隔壁的公寓。尽管她对此充满期待，但仍不免感到一丝紧张，因为她能感受到明日香和真嗣的AT力场，就像面对使徒一样。'观察：明日香和真嗣都拥有与使徒相当的AT力场。

Does that make them Angels? Observation: Asuka and Shinji had killed six Angels in total. Asuka and Shinji have never shown any urge to unite with Adam or Lilith, even during the times they were deep down in the Geofront. Conclusion: Asuka and Shinji possess angelic powers, but they do not wish to do what Angels do.

这是否意味着他们是使徒？观察：明日香和真嗣总共消灭了六名使徒。即使在深入地底都市的时候，他们也从未表现出与亚当或莉莉丝融合的冲动。结论：明日香和真嗣拥有使徒般的力量，但他们并不想做使徒所做的事。

Observation: I have angelic genes, thus angelic powers. I do not wish to unite with Adam or Lilith. Conclusion: Shinji and Asuka are just like me, they are Nephilim.' Rei felt satisfied with her conclusion, and get into the SUV which was here to pick her up.

观察结果：我拥有天使的基因，因此拥有天使的力量。我不希望与亚当或莉莉丝结合。结论：真嗣和明日香就像我一样，他们是拿非利人。' 绫波感到对自己的结论很满意，并上了来接她的SUV。

"Rits, what do you think about all this?" Misato yawned; she had just finished the mountain of paperwork. "Asuka's recovery was such a surprise; but also kind of disturbing. I mean, an Angel had saved her? That just sounds so creepy."

"律子，你怎么看这一切？" 美里打了个哈欠；她刚刚完成了那堆文件工作。

"明日香的康复真是出乎意料；但也有些令人不安。我的意思是，一个使徒救了她？这听起来太诡异了。"

"Misato, trust me, I'm just as confused as you are." Ritsuko sighed, "however, her testimony was in accordance with my observation."

"美里，相信我，我和你一样困惑。" 律子叹了口气，"不过，她的证词与我的观察一致。"

Now the only question would be why did the Angel send her back to us. If according to Asuka, the Angel took her as its company. Then why gave her back? I have a theory, a dark one..."

现在唯一的问题是，为什么天使要把她送回我们这里。如果按照明日香的说法，天使带走了她作为陪伴。那么为什么又把她送回来了呢？我有一个理论，一个黑暗的.....

"I guess you are trying to say the Angel had possessed Asuka's mind so that it could commence a surprise attack?" Misato snorted, "well if it's true then why did it not do so when we put Asuka in First Cranial Nerve? That would be a perfect time to attack since it was deep down in NERV headquarters. Besides, we all know that her brain scan tells us that she's perfectly fine; maybe the Angel who

" "我猜你说的是，天使占据了明日香的意识，以便发动突袭？" 美里嗤之以鼻，"如果是真的，那为什么在我们把明日香放入第一脑神经时它没有行动？那可是深入 NERV 总部的绝佳时机。而且，我们都知道她的脑部扫描显示她完全正常；或许那个绑架她的天使只是碰巧对我们如此仁慈。"

kidnapped her just happen to so kind to give her back to us."  
绑架她的天使只是碰巧如此仁慈，把她送回我们身边。

"No, that's not my theory," Ritsuko said, which drew the Misato's attention immediately. "What I was trying to say is..." Ritsuko paused. 'I can't let her know about Rei, yet. She's not cleared from knowing this.' "Maybe it was God's act."

"不，那不是我的理论，" 律子说道，这立刻引起了美里的注意。"我想说的是....."

律子顿了顿。'我还不能让她知道关于绫波的事。她还没被允许知道这个。' "也许是上帝的作为吧。"

Misato blinked. Then she laughed out loud, "Hahahahahaha, Rits, nice one. Hahahaha..."

美里眨了眨眼。然后她放声大笑，"哈哈哈哈哈，律子，真有你的。哈哈哈哈哈....."

Ritsuko was satisfied with her fast reaction. She decided to change the subject for now, to distract Misato from wanting to know so much. "So, do you still love him?"

律子对自己迅速的反应感到满意。她决定暂时改变话题，以分散美里对了解太多事情的渴望。"那么，你还爱他吗？"

Misato's expression immediately clouded. "What the hell are you talking about? He's just a jerk! I was just being dumb! There's nothing between us anymore!"

美里脸上的表情立刻阴沉下来。"你到底在说什么鬼话？他只是个混蛋！我只是犯傻了！我们之间已经没什么了！"

"Well, your reaction certainly tells otherwise..." Ritsuko teased. Misato huffed; she felt there's no point in staying here anymore. She stood up and left in a hurry.

"嗯，你的反应显然不是这么说的....." 律子打趣道。美里哼了一声；她觉得再待下去也没什么意义了。她站起身，匆匆离开了。

Shinji opened his eyes, and found himself extremely relaxed. After all, he had a wonderful dream last night. 'So Asuka and I are both from other timelines, and we love each other. That's simply great.'

真嗣睁开眼睛，感到异常放松。毕竟，他昨晚做了一个美梦。'原来我和明日香都来自其他时间线，而且我们相爱了。真是太好了。'

He quickly got up and changed; he wanted to talk to her badly, 他迅速起身换了衣服，迫切想要与她交谈，

although he was afraid that he wouldn't be able to compose himself. He opened the door of his bedroom, and smelt something delicious. 尽管他担心自己无法平静下来。他打开卧室的门，闻到了一股诱人的香味。

Asuka was making breakfast. She was wearing an apron, singing happily as she flipped the bacon using a slice.

明日香正在做早餐。她系着围裙，一边愉快地哼着歌，一边用铲子翻动着培根。

"Morning Asuka." Shinji yawned, "Thanks for making me breakfast."

“早上好，明日香。” 真嗣打着哈欠说，“谢谢你给我做早餐。”

Asuka turned around and smiled when she saw Shinji. "Morning, Baka. I guess it's about time for me to show you my great cooking skills!"

明日香转过身，看到真嗣时笑了。“早上好，笨蛋。我想是时候向你展示我的烹饪技巧了！”

Shinji chuckled. "Well, from my experience, you were a great cook."

真嗣轻声笑了。“嗯，根据我的经验，你是个很棒的厨师。”

"What do you expect from the great Asuka Langley Soryu?" Asuka smiled,

"And... I really want to talk to you, Shinji... about... our stories."

"你期待从伟大的惣流·明日香·兰格雷那里得到什么呢？" 明日香微笑着，"而且.....我真的想和你谈谈，真嗣.....关于.....我们的故事。"

"I'm not sure about it, tho... Since, emm, I guess we both ended up dead in the other's timeline... it wasn't a pleasant memory."

"虽然我不太确定.....因为，嗯，我想我们在对方的时空中都以死亡告终.....那不是一段愉快的记忆。"

"Don't worry, Baka. We have each other right now. And you know what's even better? Now that we have these powers, we can definitely do better than in our own timeline. And maybe things can turn out good this time. I... want to be with you forever, Shinji."

"别担心，笨蛋。我们现在有彼此。而且你知道什么更好吗？现在我们有了这些力量，肯定能比在我们自己的时空中做得更好。也许这次事情会变得美好。我.....想永远和你在一起，真嗣。"

"Until the end of the world, Asuka. I want to be with you forever as well. I... now in this world, I don't really think anyone could understand us better than ourselves..."

"直到世界尽头，明日香。我也想永远和你在一起。我.....在这个世界上，我想没有人能比我们自己更理解我们了....."

"Very right, but even if back in my timeline, I still loved you as much," Asuka said, finishing making the breakfast. "Now take your food and meet me at the table."

"非常正确，但即使回到我的时间线，我依然深爱着你，"明日香说着，完成了早餐的制作。"现在拿上你的食物，到餐桌这边来。"

Shinji grabbed his breakfast and sat down beside Asuka. "Asuka... I... since we know about the future, I think we should make plans about incoming Angels. The next one is Matariel... the one who attacked during a power outage."

真嗣拿起早餐，坐在明日香旁边。"明日香.....我.....既然我们知道未来的事，我想我们应该为即将到来的使徒制定计划。下一个使徒是马特里尔.....就是在停电期间袭击的那个。"

"Yeah, and I believe it will attack about a month later." Asuka said, "We can deal with this one pretty easily... I guess I'll just act as meatshield again, and you'll use the rifle to kill it."

"是啊，而且我估计它大约一个月后会发动攻击。"明日香说，"我们能轻松对付这家伙.....我想我会再次充当肉盾，而你就用步枪干掉它。"

"No! Asuka, I know it hurts! I don't want you to do it again!" "Anta Baka? What do you propose then?"

"不行！明日香，我知道这很痛苦！我不想你再这么做！" "你这个笨蛋？那你有什么提议？"

"Well, I could be the meatshield this time... or rather, we could simply start shooting it right away, since the last time it was me who dropped the rifle. Now that we know its abilities, we certainly could simply shoot it to death as soon as we get out from the tunnel."

"嗯，这次我可以当肉盾.....或者，我们可以一出来就直接开枪，毕竟上次是我把步枪掉了。现在我们知道它的能力了，我们完全可以一出来就把它射死。"

"Well, you are not as Baka as I thought..." Asuka smiled, "But what about SEELE? Angels are no match for us now that we have these powers. And SEELE was the real threat!"

"嗯，你没我想的那么笨嘛....."明日香微笑道，"但 SEELE 呢？现在我们有了这些力量，使徒根本不是对手。SEELE 才是真正的威胁！"

"Yeah... and MP EVAs... I guess we'll deal with them later..." Shinji flinched at the memory of Asuka's Unit 02 being torn apart. "Asuka... In my world, something very bad happened to you..."

"是啊.....还有 MP EVA.....我想我们以后再处理它们....."真嗣想起明日香的二号

机被撕裂的记忆，不禁一颤。"明日香.....在我的世界里，你遭遇了非常糟糕的事情....."

"Then don't think about it! Im here now, right? I want to talk about other stuff, tho. Im really curious about... Like... when did we get together, in your timeline?"

"那就别想了！我现在就在这儿，对吧？我想聊聊别的，虽然。我真的很想知道.....比如.....在你的时间线上，我们是什么时候在一起的？"

Shinji chuckled, "Well, it was after Z eruel. I was absorbed into Unit 01's core, and you were worried to death. After I came out, you just told me something like don't ever do that to me again. And I said I won't leave you again, and... we kissed..." Shinji blushed a little, "What about you?"

真嗣轻笑道，“嗯，那是在第 10 使徒之后。我被吸收进了 01 号机的核心，你担心得要命。我出来后，你只告诉我别再那样吓你了。然后我说我不会再离开你，接着.....我们就亲吻了.....”真嗣微微脸红，“你呢？”

"Well, remember the day I asked you for a kiss because I was bored? I pinched your nose and kissed you, and you pinned me on the table. Then we just held each other... and everything happened naturally..." Asuka also blushed, pleasant memories resurfacing.

“嗯，记得那天我因为无聊向你索吻吗？我捏了捏你的鼻子然后吻了你，你把我按在桌上。然后我们就那样相拥.....一切自然而然地发生了.....”明日香也脸红了，愉快的记忆再次浮现。

"Well, you know what Asuka. In my world, you also asked me for a kiss that night. But instead of holding you, I did nothing. I simply

“好吧，你知道的，明日香。在我的世界里，那天晚上你也向我索吻了。但我没有抱住你，我什么都没做。我只是.....”

froze. I was suffocating and pushed you back..." Shinji said with an apologetic look, "Sorry..."

僵住了。我感到窒息，把你推开了.....”真嗣带着歉意的表情说，“对不起.....”

Asuka huffed. "That would've been bad, Shinji. I risked my heart for that. I don't know what I would do, but I would definitely think you rejected me." 明日香哼了一声。“那会很糟糕，真嗣。我为了那件事冒了很大的风险。我不知道我会怎么做，但我肯定会认为你拒绝了我。

"Well, we still got together after that..." Shinji sighed. "Asuka, what do you think about our powers? I could feel my AT-Field; like my other limb or something. I think it was awoken by my anger... that day I went to find you in the ward, Takuma and a bunch of mobsters blocked me in a small alley..."

"嗯，那之后我们还是在一起了....." 真嗣叹了口气。"明日香，你怎么看我们的力量？我能感觉到我的 AT 力场；就像我的另一只手臂一样。我觉得它是被我的愤怒唤醒的.....那天我去医院找你，拓马和一群暴徒把我堵在了一条小巷里....."

"Takuma? you mean that jerk from the basketball team?" Asuka interrupted, an evil grin on her face, "I told you about how I broke his dirty fingers... I bet you did something worse... no, *better*, didn't you?"

"拓真？你是说篮球队那个混蛋？" 明日香打断道，脸上带着邪恶的笑容，"我跟你说过我是怎么弄断他那肮脏的手指的.....我打赌你肯定做了更糟糕.....不，更棒的事，对吧？"

Shinji smiled, "Yeah... He said something very wrong... he said he wanted to... enjoy you in front of me... and I... punched him. He just flew away and crushed a metallic trash box. Gods that was satisfying..."

"是啊.....他说了些非常过分的话.....他说他想.....在我面前享用你.....然后我.....揍了他。他就这么飞了出去，撞碎了一个金属垃圾桶。天哪，那感觉真爽....." 真嗣微笑着说。

Asuka couldn't help but feel disgusted at Shinji's words. "Mein Gott... That's so disgusting... Shinji, Im glad that you served him right." Taking a deep breath, Asuka continued, "Well, Shinji. What do you think about our powers? I mean, the AT-Fields and all that."

明日香听到真嗣的话不禁感到恶心。"我的天.....太恶心了.....真嗣，我很高兴你让他得到了应有的惩罚。" 深吸一口气，明日香继续说道，"那么，真嗣，你怎么看我们的力量？我是说，AT 力场之类的。"

"I think it has something to do with Instrumentality... Asuka, you experienced Instrumentality in your timeline as well, right?"

"我觉得这和人类补完计划有关.....明日香，你在你的时间线里也经历了人类补完计划，对吧？"

"Yeah, and I was the fucking trigger! I saw all those memories!" Asuka shook her head, trying to clear herself from those images, "I mean, once the Instrumentality is completed, whoever was the trigger basically



became gods, right?"

"没错，而且我就是那个该死的触发者！我看到了所有那些记忆！"明日香摇了摇头，试图从那些影像中清醒过来，"我的意思是，一旦人类补完计划完成，触发者基本上就成了神，对吧？"

"I guess... but I also think I saw Rei there... I think it was her who send me there..."

"我想.....但我也觉得我在那里看到了丽.....我觉得是她把我送去的....."

"Well, I was sent here by her as well. What a strange coincidence. Hey, Baka, you said she's your sister. What made you say that?"

"嗯，我也是被她派到这里来的。真是奇怪的巧合。嘿，笨蛋，你说她是你妹妹。你为什么这么说？"

"Well, from Instrumentality I learned that she's a clone using my mother's and Lilith's DNA. So she's half Angel as well."

"嗯，从人类补完计划中我了解到，她是用我母亲和莉莉丝的 DNA 克隆的。所以她也是半个使徒。"

Asuka blinked. That was something new to her. "Shinji... I think now I know why we both saw her there... She was the one who triggered Third Impact... she was the real God..."

明日香眨了眨眼。这对她来说是新信息。"真嗣...我想我现在知道为什么我们俩都在那里看到了她...是她引发了第三次冲击...她才是真正的神..."

Shinji felt a chill ran down his spine. 'Why hadn't I thought about that before? And it makes so much sense.' "Yeah, I'm afraid that you're right, Asuka..."

真嗣感到一阵寒意沿着脊背而下。'为什么我之前没想到这一点？这太有道理了。' "是啊，恐怕你是对的，明日香....."

"Of course I am, Baka!" Asuka pouted, "So this time, we'll need to help her. She was like a damn doll... maybe if we get her off the

"当然是我对，笨蛋！"明日香噘嘴道，"所以这次，我们需要帮她。她就像个该死的玩偶.....也许如果我们让她戒掉"

drugs, she will make her own decision and reject Third Impact..."

药物，她会自己做出决定，拒绝第三次冲击....."

Shinji nodded. After all, now they have a plan.

真嗣点了点头。毕竟，现在他们有了一个计划。

Rei stood in front of the door of Katsuragi Residence, and pressed the doorbell. "Coming!" Several seconds later, the door hissed open, and Shinji came into view. "Ah, Hi, Rei! Nice to see you!"

丽站在葛城宅邸的门前，按下了门铃。“来了！”几秒钟后，门嘶嘶地打开了，真嗣出现在视野中。“啊，嗨，丽！见到你真高兴！”

Rei made a faint smile. "Nice to see you too, Shinji-kun. Ive finished packing my personal belongings and delivered them here. I am moving in today. I am happy to be able to live with you and Asuka- chan."

丽微微一笑。“见到你我也很高兴，真嗣君。我已经打包好我的个人物品并送到了这里。今天我就要搬进来了。我很高兴能和你还有明日香一起生活。”

"We are happy to have you over here as well, Rei." Shinji smiled, "errr... are those boxes your stuff? I can help you with those if you want..."

"我们也很高兴你能来这里，丽。" 真嗣微笑着，"呃...那些箱子是你的东西吗？如果你愿意的话，我可以帮你搬..."

"That will be appreciated, Shinji-kun. Thank you for your kindness."

"那真是太感谢了，真嗣君。谢谢你的好意。"

Shinji called out Asuka to help Rei move her stuff, who was willing to help. After all, Rei didn't have too many things. They finished their  
真嗣叫来明日香帮忙搬丽的东西，她也很乐意帮忙。毕竟，丽的东西并不多。他们很快就完成了搬运。

job rather quickly. 工作完成得相当迅速。

Rei decided to spend her afternoon with her friends. The three pilots just watched some TV together, gossiped around, and eventually went to do their respective entertainments. Asuka just started reading mangas, while Shinji listened to his SDAT, and Rei was simply reading.

丽决定和朋友们共度下午时光。三位驾驶员一起看了会儿电视，闲聊了一番，最后各自去享受自己的娱乐活动。明日香开始看漫画，真嗣听着他的 SDAT，而丽则静静地阅读。

"Im home!" Misato announced, and went directly for a beer. "Welcome home!" Shinji and Asuka said in unison.

“我回来了！”美里宣布道，径直去拿了一罐啤酒。“欢迎回家！”真嗣和明日香异口同声地说。

"Oh, Hi there, Rei." Misato greeted the blue-haired girl, "How do you feel about your first day here?"

"哦，你好，丽。"美里向蓝发女孩打招呼，"你觉得今天在这里的第一天怎么样？"

"Hello, Captain Katsuragi. Today was rather pleasant. I have my friends here who care about me. Spending time with them makes me feel happy. I do not wish to be alone again."

"您好，葛城上尉。今天相当愉快。我有关心我的朋友们在这里。和他们在一起让我感到快乐。我不想再孤单一人了。"

"Well, that's good to hear. Rei, now you just live next door. You are always welcome here. Here, take this." Misato said, handing a keycard to Rei, who gladly accepted. She truly felt happy for her kids at that time.

"嗯，那真是太好了。丽，现在你就住在隔壁。你随时都欢迎来这里。来，拿着这个。"美里说着，递给丽一张钥匙卡，丽欣然接受。那一刻，她真心为她的孩子们感到高兴。"

AN: Another short chapter. Just to make things clear. Starting from the next one we'll go back to canon-like, and things will move forward.

作者注：又是一篇短章节，只为厘清一些事情。从下一章开始，我们将回归类似原作的风格，情节也将推进。

---

## Chapter 8: The days before Tokyo-3 Stood Still

AN: Things are going back to normal. Expect loads of WAFF.

作者注：一切正逐渐回归正轨。敬请期待满满的温馨甜蜜。

I do not own Evangelion.

我不拥有《新世纪福音战士》。

Chapter 8: The days before Tokyo-3 stood still

第八章：东京-3 静止前的日子

It's been a week since Rei had moved in. She spent most of her time with Asuka and Shinji in Misato's apartment, and she truly enjoyed it. She was

becoming better at identifying and dealing with her emotions. Today she had a scheduled scan of her brain, and Misato had left early to catch up on the paperwork. That leaves Shinji and Asuka alone in the apartment. 丽搬进来已经一周了。她大部分时间都和明日香、真嗣在美里小姐的公寓里度过，她真的很享受这种生活。她越来越擅长识别和处理自己的情绪。今天她有一个大脑扫描的预约，而美里小姐早早出门去赶工作文件了。于是，公寓里只剩下真嗣和明日香两人。

"... emmm... so warm. Comfy." Asuka murmured as she snuggled closer to Shinji, who was having his arms wrapped around the redhead.

"...嗯...好暖和。舒服。" 明日香喃喃自语，更紧地依偎在真嗣怀里，他的双臂正环绕着红发女孩。

"Asuka..." Shinji whispered into her ears, "I really love doing this... but I think it's time to get up."

"明日香..." 真嗣在她耳边低语，"我真的很喜欢这样...但我想是时候起床了。"

"Baka... dun wanna. No school. No sync tests. No wonder girl. No Misato. No Angels. Just you and me. We don't get much of this happening." Asuka said, gently kissed on Shinji's lips.

"笨蛋...不想起。不上学。不进行同步测试。没有那个怪女孩。没有美里。没有使徒。只有你和我。我们很少有这样的时光。" 明日香说着，温柔地吻了真嗣的唇。

"Yeah... but it's already 9 am, and Im kinda hungry." Shinji said as he got up from the bed, "Im going to make some breakfast... and I think we can do something together today..."

"是啊...但现在已经早上 9 点了，我有点饿了。" 真嗣从床上起身，"我去弄点早餐...我想我们今天可以一起做点什么..."

Asuka turned around and smiled, "Are you taking me on a date?"

明日香转过身来，微笑着说："你是要带我去约会吗？"

"Well, yes..." Shinji smiled back, "You were right... we don't get peaceful days like today without anything to worry about. And I'd like

"嗯，是的..." 真嗣回以微笑，"你说的对...像今天这样无忧无虑的平静日子并不多。我想

to make use of it."

利用它。

"Great... you are getting better at dealing with girls..." Asuka got up as well and yawned. "Now, let's make something to eat, Baka. I'll help you with the dishes."

“太好了.....你应付女孩子的技巧越来越好了.....” 明日香也起身打了个哈欠。

“现在，我们去做点吃的吧，笨蛋。我来帮你洗碗。”

The sun was high in the sky, which was pure blue with scattered clouds. Shinji and Asuka walked along the streets; they decided to go to Arcade first. The arcade was full of people as usual, so Shinji and Asuka just found a quiet corner in the Arcade and played whatever games' there.

阳光高照，天空湛蓝，点缀着几朵白云。真嗣和明日香沿着街道走着；他们决定先去游戏中心。游戏中心一如既往地人满为患，于是真嗣和明日香在游戏中心找了个安静的角落，玩起了那里的游戏。

"Ha, I beat you again, Shinji!" Asuka exclaimed, the screen in front of her flickering a score of 20 -2. It was a game like mortal combat; Asuka was always good at these things.

“哈，我又赢你了，真嗣！” 明日香欢呼道，她面前的屏幕闪烁着 20 比 2 的比分。这是一款类似生死格斗的游戏；明日香在这些游戏上总是很拿手。

"So much fun to bully the weak..." Shinji murmured, which got him a slap from Asuka at the back of his head, "Ouch! I'm sorry!"

“欺负弱者真有趣.....” 真嗣低声说道，结果被明日香在后脑勺上拍了一巴掌，

“哎哟！对不起！”

"Baka! I don't want to bully anyone! I want a fair fight!" Asuka huffed, looking around. "I know you are not good at these fighting games.

“笨蛋！我不想欺负任何人！我要公平对决！” 明日香气呼呼地环顾四周。“我知道你不擅长这些格斗游戏。”

How about that one? That looks cool." Shinji turned around and followed Asuka's gaze just to find a racing game.

"那个怎么样？看起来很酷。” 真嗣转过身，顺着明日香的目光望去，发现是一款赛车游戏。

"I guess..." Shinji walked to the machine. There were two seats, one was for the red race car, and another was for the blue race car.

“我想……” 真嗣走向那台机器。那里有两个座位，一个是红色赛车，另一个是蓝色赛车。

"Yes! They have a red one! I'll take the red car; you know I've always liked red." Asuka happily and sat down on the seat. Shinji sighed; he knew he would never win against her, not only in games. After about 3 minutes of racing, unsurprisingly, Asuka won again by a large margin.

“太好了！他们有红色的！我要红色那辆；你知道我一直喜欢红色。” 明日香开心地坐到了座位上。真嗣叹了口气；他知道自己在游戏中永远赢不了她，不仅仅是在游戏里。大约三分种的竞速后，不出所料，明日香再次以大幅优势获胜。

"Yeeeah! That was awesome! Not as awesome as piloting an Eva, but still cool!" Asuka cried in joy, which worried Shinji a bit. "Asuka, you can't just yell in public about our identity! It can cause unwanted consequences!"

"耶！太棒了！虽然没有驾驶 Eva 那么酷，但还是挺不错的！" 明日香兴奋地说道，这让真嗣有些担心。"明日香，你不能在公共场合大喊我们的身份！这可能会带来不必要的麻烦！"

"Who cares? I'm not some helpless girl." Asuka pouted, "Now I'm kinda hungry. Let's go find somewhere to eat lunch!"

"谁在乎呢？我又不是什么无助的女孩。" 明日香撅嘴道，"现在我有点饿了。我们去找个地方吃午饭吧！"

Shinji searched in his mind about any places he went with Asuka in his timeline. He then decided that the Italian restaurant would suffice. "Asuka, there is an Italian..."

真嗣在脑海中搜索着和他所在时间线中与明日香一起去过的地方。然后他决定去那家意大利餐厅。"明日香，那里有一家意大利..."

"I know that place; I've been there with you a lot," Asuka smiled, "I guess it's the same for you, Baka."

"我知道那个地方；我和你一起去过很多次，" 明日香微笑着说，"我想对你来说也是一样的，笨蛋。"

"Yeah, you're right." Shinji blushed a little, "Let's not waste any time." They got up from the seats and exited the Arcade.

"嗯，你说得对。" 真嗣微微脸红，"我们别浪费时间了。" 他们从座位上站起来，离开了游戏中心。"

As they were approaching the restaurant, they suddenly saw someone familiar. "Hey, Shinji. Look who they are." She pointed her finger in the direction of two familiar figures; an evil smile appeared on her face. Shinji looked in the direction, just to be dumbfounded. "Are they... Toji and Hikari? Wha..."

当他们走近餐厅时，突然看到了一个熟悉的人。"嘿，真嗣。看看他们是谁。"她用手指向两个熟悉的身影；她的脸上露出了邪恶的微笑。真嗣顺着方向看去，顿时目瞪口呆。"他们是.....东治和光？什....."

"I don't remember they started dating so early..." Asuka smirked, "Maybe this time our relationship helped them a lot..." Asuka signaled Shinji to stay for a while and sneaked closer to them. She held her breath and walked as light as possible.

"我不记得他们这么早就交往了....." 明日香微微一笑，"也许这次我们的关系帮了他们不少忙....." 明日香示意真嗣稍等片刻，然后悄悄地靠近他们。她屏住呼吸，尽可能轻巧地走过去。

"... thanks Toji. It's really sweet for you to come out with me." Hikari said, her face blushing.

".....谢谢你，阿薰。你愿意陪我出来真是太好了。" 光子说道，脸上泛起红晕。

"N-no problem, Hikari. I-I'm, errr, happy to do this with you." Toji stammered, his face also blushing.

"没、没关系，光子。我、我，呃，很高兴能和你一起出来。" 阿薰结结巴巴地说，脸上也泛起了红晕。

Asuka was just behind Hikari. She lightly patted Hikari's shoulder. Hikari thought it was Toji who did that, but as she found out that Toji's both hands were resting on his sides, she looked around.

明日香就跟在光身后。她轻轻拍了拍光的肩膀。光以为是总司干的，但当她发现总司的双手都垂在身侧时，她环顾四周。

"Ahhh!" Hikari gasped in surprise as her face mere inches away from Asuka's. "Errr, Asuka-chan? What are you doing here?"

"啊！" 光惊呼一声，她的脸与明日香的仅相隔几英寸。"呃，明日香酱？你在这里做什么？"

Toji also noticed the redhead's presence; he was very embarrassed since he realized that Asuka would never let him hear the end of it.

总司也注意到了红发女孩的存在；他感到非常尴尬，因为他意识到明日香绝不会轻易放过他。

"My, my, Hikari, hooked up with the Jock Stooge already? Much faster than I expected..." Asuka giggled, "What got this dense monkey head to notice that you like him?"

"哎呀，光，这么快就和那个运动健将小丑搭上了？比我想象的还要快呢....." 明日香咯咯笑着，"是什么让这个迟钝的猴子脑袋注意到你喜欢他？"

Hikari blushed hard, "Asuka! We are not..."

光脸红得厉害，"明日香！我们没有....."

"Meh, you guys are really no fun. C'mon, you are on a public date! What, if I was not to catch you, you are gonna hide it or what?"

"哎，你们真是没意思。来吧，你们这是在公开约会呢！要不是我撞见，你们打算藏着掖着不成？"

"Asuka, it's just that..." Hikari paused for a moment, not sure whether to say what she was about to say. "Emmm, that you... almost... can't come back, and seeing Shinji like that... that... made me realize, you don't know what you have until you lose it... then I thought I should really, really grab on what I want as soon as possible. I know we are not like you guys who have to fight monsters, but I still think I should really enjoy life as much as possible... so... I made some initiatives."

"Asuka，只是....." 光犹豫了一下，不确定是否该说出她即将说的话。"嗯，你.....几乎.....回不来，看到真嗣那样.....让我意识到，有些东西直到失去后才懂得珍惜.....然后我想，我真的应该尽快抓住我想要的东西。我知道我们不像你们那样需要与怪兽战斗，但我仍然认为我应该尽可能地享受生活.....所以.....我主动了一些。"

Asuka tensed up as her memory of Mount Asama resurfaced when hearing Hikari's words. But she relaxed quickly as she realized that it was all in the past. Now that she was truly happy to see her best friend enjoying her life. "Im glad you think like that, Hikari. Meh, Jock stooge, you are so not a real man! Who would let a girl take the initiative!"

听到光的话，阿斯卡想起了浅间山的记忆，身体不由得紧绷起来。但她很快放松下来，意识到一切都已成为过去。现在，她真心为看到好友享受生活而感到高兴。"我很高兴你这么想，光。哼，运动白痴，你根本不算个男人！哪有让女生主动的！"



Toji was provoked, "Hey! I... what about you and Shin-man?" Toji quickly turned the subject, trying to hide his embarrassment, "You guys are dancing around each other longer than us! Who are you to tell me what I did wrong!"

被激怒的冬二反击道："嘿！我.....你和真嗣呢？" 冬二迅速转移话题，试图掩饰自己的尴尬，"你们俩互相绕圈子的时间比我们还长！你有什么资格说我做错了什么！"

Asuka was surprised that the Jock was actually able to push back, "Ahem, I have to agree that Baka-Shinji was denser than you, but..." an evil grin appeared on her face, "what do you think is the reason that I'm here today, and dressed like this?" Asuka swirled around, showing off her outfit. She was wearing a light-blue skirt and tank top, which covered a pink t-shirt, and white socks; she also wore a violet choker. In other words, a perfect choice for a date.

明日香惊讶地发现那个运动型男生竟然能顶住压力，"咳咳，我得承认笨蛋真嗣确实比你迟钝，但是....." 她脸上露出了邪恶的笑容，"你猜我今天为什么会在这里，还穿成这样？" 明日香转了一圈，展示她的装扮。她穿着一条浅蓝色裙子和背心，里面是粉色T恤，还有白色袜子；她还戴了一条紫色的项圈。换句话说，这是约会的完美选择。

"Wow, I haven't noticed that... you look gorgeous..." Hikari paused for a moment to just appreciate Asuka's beauty, who smiled widely as her ego was boosted *hard*. "I guess you are here for a date? No other reasons I can think of... and Shinji would be the one... but where is he? Doesn't he live with you?"

"哇，我之前都没注意到.....你看起来真美....." 光留了一会儿，只是欣赏明日香的美貌，后者因为自信大增而笑得格外灿烂。"我想你是来约会的吧？我想不出其他理由.....而真嗣应该是那个人.....但他去哪儿了？他不和你住一起吗？"

"Alright, Baka. You can come out." Asuka turned around and said to the bushes behind her. Shinji swiftly came out, smiling sheepishly.

"好了，笨蛋，你可以出来了。" 明日香转过身对身后的灌木丛说道。真嗣迅速现身，尴尬地笑着。

"Er, hi, Horaki-san, hi, Toji."

"呃，你好，洞木同学，你好，东治。"

Toji's expression unreadable. "Man... you guys are really... Shin-  
东治的表情难以捉摸。 "伙计.....你们俩真是.....真嗣和....."

man and the Red Devil..."

"红魔....."

"I knew it! You guys just looked like a married couple!" Hikari exclaimed,  
"So... how long have you been doing this?"

"我就知道！你们俩看起来就像一对夫妻！" 光兴奋地说，"那么...你们在一起多久了？"

"Emmm, since I got out from *there* ." Asuka swallowed, "Basically the same reason as you and the monkey here, we thought we should enjoy the life while we still can..."

"嗯，自从我从那里出来之后。" 明日香咽了咽口水，"基本上和你和这里的猴子一样，我们都觉得应该趁还能享受的时候好好生活..."

"Aw, Im so happy for you guys! By the way, what were you going to do?"

"哇，我真为你们高兴！对了，你们打算做什么？"

"We were to have lunch at this restaurant." Shinji pointed at the Italian restaurant beside them, "emmm, you guys may join us if you want."

"我们本来说好在这家餐厅吃午饭的。" 真嗣指着旁边的意大利餐厅说，"嗯，如果你们愿意的话，也可以一起来。"

"I'd love to, but isn't this place a bit expensive?" Hikari said, "Toji and I were to head back home..."

"我很想去，但这地方是不是有点贵？" 美里说，"我和阿薰本来打算回家的....."

"Not a problem! We can pay for you! We pilots get tons of salary, but it's not like we can spend them anywhere! Cmon, Hikari! We'll have so much fun!" Asuka said, grabbing Hikari's hand.

"没关系的！我们可以请客！我们这些驾驶员薪水多得不得了，但又不是随处都能花掉！来吧，美里！我们会玩得很开心的！" 明日香说着，抓住了美里的手。"

"But... it's still..." "但是...它仍然..."

"Just listen to her, Horaki-san," Shinji interrupted, "We want to do it;

"就听她的吧，洞木同学，" 真嗣打断道，"我们想这么做；"

Asuka's right, we will have fun together."

明日香说得对，我们会一起玩得很开心的。

Asuka smiled, "That's right, Baka." Turning around to look at Toji, "Now, monkey head, why don't you say something?"

明日香微笑着，“没错，笨蛋。”转身看向真治，“现在，猴头，你怎么不说话呢？”

Toji stammered; he wasn't proficient at dealing with relationships, much less accepting such a gorgeous offer. "S-Soryu-san, I-I'd like to. Hikari, cmon, they are just being nice. I don't know about the Red Devil, but if Shin-man here says we can join them, then I'm in for it."

真治结巴了；他不太擅长处理感情问题，更别提接受如此诱人的邀请了。“S-Soryu-san，我-我愿意。光，来吧，他们只是好意。我不了解红魔，但如果真嗣说我们可以加入他们，那我就加入。”

"Hey, what's that supposed to mean?!" Asuka raised her volume, "It's not like I'm being nice to you! Only because you're my best friend's boyfriend!"

“嘿，你这是什么意思？！”明日香提高了音量，“我又不是对你好！只是因为你是我的好朋友男朋友！”

"I'm having enough of you, redheaded bitch! I don't know what Shinji sees in you!" Toji shouted back.

"我已经受够你了，红发婊子！我不知道真嗣看上你哪一点！"冬二回喊道。

"Are you gonna stop and have lunch or what?" Shinji interrupted, sounding irritated. The last thing he wanted was to observe a fight between his girlfriend and his best friend.

"你到底要不要停下来吃午饭？"真嗣打断道，听起来有些不耐烦。他最不希望的就是目睹女友和好友之间的争吵。

Asuka and Toji stared at each other for a few seconds. Toji surrendered and looked away first, while Asuka huffed triumphantly.

明日香和冬二互瞪了几秒钟。冬二先败下阵来，移开了视线，而明日香则得意地哼了一声。

Shinji led the way into the restaurant. The waiter stopped them at the counter. "Hey kids, we don't have time treating children here."

真嗣领着大家走进餐厅。服务员在柜台前拦住了他们。“嘿，孩子们，我们这里不接待小孩。”

Asuka, although she had dealt with the exact same situation before, she still decided to go the hard way as she was irritated by the waiter's rude attitude. "We are not kids! And if you don't let us in, I'll make sure to give some special attention to your little place with my Unit 02 during the next fight!"

尽管明日香之前也遇到过同样的情况，但她还是决定硬闯，因为服务员的无礼态度让她很恼火。“我们不是孩子！如果你不让我们进去，下次战斗时我一定会让我的二号机特别关照一下你这个小地方！”

The waiter blinked. He was not sure whether to be angry or sorry. Shinji noticed the look on his face and took out his NERV ID to show him. "Errr, sorry. But we really want to eat here; I think this will convince you."

服务员愣住了。他不知道该生气还是道歉。真嗣注意到他的表情，掏出自己的 NERV ID 给他看。“呃，抱歉。但我们真的很想在这里吃饭；我想这个能说服你。”

The waiter took his NERV ID and inspected it. After he was sure it's real, he handed the card back, his hand shivering. He had had no

服务员接过他的 NERV 身份卡，仔细检查了一番。确认无误后，他将卡片递还回去，手微微颤抖。他完全不知道这会给他带来什么麻烦。“呃，真的很抱歉给您带来不便，碇先生。请接受我的歉意。”随后，他将孩子们领到了餐厅里位置最好的桌子旁，“请坐这里。小吃马上就上。”服务员匆匆离去，显然很是尴尬。毕竟，他差点毁了这家餐厅，无论是物理上还是声誉上。

idea what he could get him into. "Er, I'm truly sorry to cause this inconvenience to you, Mister Ikari. Please accept my apology." He then led the kids to the table that's at the best position in the restaurant, "You may sit here. Snacks will be served in a minute." The waiter walked off in a hurry, clearly embarrassed. After all, he almost ruined the restaurant, both physically and its reputation.

明日香哼了一声，“为什么总是这样？人们就不能对我们多些尊重吗？年轻有什么不好？”她心想，“这就是为什么我一直想长大。”

Asuka huffed, "Why it always has to come to this? Why couldn't people just show more respect to us? What's so bad about looking young?" 'And that's why I've always wanted to grow up.' She thought.

"Tadaima!" Misato announced once she walked into her apartment. She was supposed to work at NERV late today, but now she just wanted to

push everything work-related aside since she was so tired. She didn't get the normal "Welcome home" from the kids, and she was curious. Misato entered the dining area. The table was clear, dishes were done. Everything was organized and tidy. But no sign of Asuka and Shinji.

"我回来了！" 美里一走进公寓就大声宣布。她原本应该在 NERV 加班到很晚，但现在她只想把所有工作相关的事情都抛到一边，因为她太累了。孩子们没有像往常一样说“欢迎回家”，这让她感到好奇。美里走进餐厅。桌子是空的，餐具都洗好了。一切都井井有条，整洁干净。但不见明日香和真嗣的踪影。

"Where could they be going?" She murmured to herself. She then picked up the phone; maybe asking about Section 2 would be a good idea.

"他们能去哪儿呢？" 她喃喃自语。然后她拿起电话；也许问问第二支部是个好主意。

"Agent Yamada." Section 2 agent said.

"山田特工。" 第二支部的特工说道。

"This is Captain Katsuragi. I want to know the location of the pilots."

"这里是葛城美里队长。我想知道驾驶员们的位置。"

"Yes, Captain. Now the Second and the Third Children are having lunch in the Italian Restaurant with two of their classmates."

"是的，队长。现在二号机和三号机的驾驶员正在意大利餐厅与两位同学共进午餐。"

Misato smiled. She had always wanted to push those two together; now, it seems like her job was done. However, she couldn't help but feel a bit of sadness. After all, those two mentally screwed kids could find their happiness; what did she have? 'I wish I could find someone to be with as well...' She shook her head as the image of Kaji appeared in her head.

'Why is he still in my head? He's just a jerk. I

美里笑了。她一直想撮合那两个人；现在，似乎她的任务已经完成了。然而，她不禁感到一丝悲伤。毕竟，那两个心理受创的孩子能找到他们的幸福；她自己有什么呢？'我也希望能找到一个相伴的人.....'她摇了摇头，脑海中浮现出加持的形象。'为什么他还留在我的脑海里？他只是个混蛋。我

don't want him.' Misato sighed; she grabbed a beer from the fridge and emptied it in one go.

不想让他走。' 美里叹了口气；她从冰箱里拿出一罐啤酒，一口气喝了个精光。

The sunset of Tokyo-3 was extraordinary. When seeing the sight of the golden light from the sun shot through and scattered behind the skyscrapers, one would truly feel a moment of peace in their heart. Shinji and Asuka sat on the hill that Misato had taken him to after his first battle, trying to enjoy the feeling of happiness and peace.

东京-3 的日落格外壮丽。当看到金色的阳光穿透并散落在摩天大楼之间，人们心中会真正感受到片刻的宁静。真嗣和明日香坐在美里带他去的那座小山上，那是他第一次战斗后的事，他们试图享受这份幸福与宁静。

"Shinji... hey, Baka!" Asuka tried to get attention from her boyfriend. Seeing Shinji turned his head to her, she continued, "You know... I am so happy to have you with me... and I feel so lucky to be given a second chance... I... I fucked up first time hard..." She trailed off, wanting to get some reaction from Shinji.

“真嗣.....嘿，笨蛋！”明日香试图引起她男朋友的注意。看到真嗣转过头来，她继续说道，“你知道吗.....有你在身边我真的很开心.....能得到第二次机会我感到非常幸运.....我.....我第一次搞砸了.....”她话音渐弱，想看看真嗣的反应。

Shinji, on the other hand, was not really in the mood of talking about their pasts. He simply wanted to enjoy his time alone with Asuka, the girl he loved who loved him back. "Asuka, I... I really don't want to talk about this right now... you know that I am really happy to have you as well, and I simply want to enjoy my life with you."

另一方面，真嗣并没有心情谈论他们的过去。他只是想和明香独处，享受与这个爱他、他也爱的女孩在一起的时光。“明香，我.....我现在真的不想谈这个.....你知道我也真的很高兴有你在身边，我只想和你一起享受生活。”

Asuka wasn't stopping, tho. She talked when she was ready, and when she was ready, she won't stop talking. "Shinji, that's our pasts, and we need to face them. And whatever you had experienced, you now have me here to support you, right? I just want to..."

但明香并没有停下来。她准备好时就会说话，一旦开始，就不会停止。“真嗣，那是我们的过去，我们必须面对。无论你经历了什么，现在有我在这里支持你，对吧？我只是想.....”

Shinji interrupted her. He knew Asuka so well to think that she would just stop talking. And he also knew that Asuka was right; there's no running away from their pasts. In both timelines, it involved them opening up to

each other and their traumatic childhoods to get them together. As for now, they would need to get past their pasts. It was different from just soaking in his own thoughts; now that he had Asuka beside him, who would constantly remind him of reality. "You were torn to shreds, and I couldn't do anything but watch." Shinji said in a plain tone.

真嗣打断了她。他太了解明香了，知道她不会轻易停止说话。他也知道明香是对的；逃避过去是不可能的。在两个时间线中，他们都必须向对方敞开心扉，分享各自的童年创伤，才能走到一起。而现在，他们需要克服过去。这不同于沉浸在自己的思绪中；现在有明香在身边，她会不断提醒他现实的存在。“你被撕成了碎片，而我除了旁观什么也做不了。”真嗣平静地说道。

Asuka gasped. She never thought about anything so graphic; she thought killing every single person on earth and watch their memories was traumatic enough. But now it's obvious that something much worse could happen. She thought about the image of Shinji being torn apart in her head and immediately regreated it.

明日香倒抽一口凉气。她从未想过如此露骨的事情；她认为杀死地球上的每一个人并观看他们的记忆已经足够创伤了。但现在显然有更糟糕的事情可能发生。她脑海中浮现出真嗣被撕裂的画面，立刻后悔了。

Asuka swallowed hard and took a deep breath. "Mein Gott... Shinji, Im sorry... I didn't know... I thought my experience was bad enough..." No need to say, she reached out her hand and took hold of Shinji's, who squeezed her hand lightly to say 'Don't worry. Im still

明日香艰难地咽了咽口水，深吸一口气。"我的天啊.....真嗣，对不起.....我不知道.....我以为我的经历已经够糟糕了....."无需多言，她伸出手握住了真嗣的，后者轻轻握了握她的手，仿佛在说：'别担心。我还在'

here.' 这里。'

"It's okay, Asuka." Shinji sighed, "You fought well against mass production Evas. You destroyed them all. But they cheated, and they got back up. You were out of power. The MP Evas impaled me using the replicas of the Lance of Longinus, and they made me watch... it was all my fath... Commander Ikari's plan." He took a deep breath, "this is something we have to deal with. They were using you to control me. And your last use would be to completely drive me insane, so that I would destroy the world as they wanted."

“没事的，明日香。”真嗣叹了口气，“你对抗量产型 EVA 的表现很出色，把它们全消灭了。但它们耍诈，又复活了。你当时能量耗尽。那些量产机用朗基努斯之枪的复制品刺穿了我，还让我眼睁睁看着.....这都是我父亲.....司令碇源堂的计划。”他深吸一口气，“这是我们必须面对的现实。他们在利用你来控制我。而你的最终用途，就是彻底逼疯我，好让我按他们的意愿毁灭世界。”

Asuka knew about SEELE's secret plan to end the world. She experienced it herself. "Shinji..." Asuka felt a surge of anger shot up inside her body. After all of those years of training and piloting, she had always thought that she should be the most valuable pilot among all. In the end, she was the one always as expendable as a damn tool. "In my timeline, you got absorbed into the core again when fighting that Kaworu jerk. And I had to pilot Unit 01 when the invasion happened... so it was all coincidental that I was the trigger of instrumentality." She sighed again, realizing how small the chance was for her to be the actual trigger. If that didn't happen, she would be in the soup of LCL right now. "Shinji... I'd really like some cuddles right now."

明日香知道 Seele 的秘密计划，那是她亲身体验过的。“真嗣...”明日香感到一股怒火在体内升腾。经历了这么多年的训练和驾驶，她一直以为自己应该是所有驾驶员中最有价值的。最终，她却总是像一个该死的工具一样可有可无。“在我的时间线里，你在和那个混蛋渚薰战斗时又被吸入了核心。而我不得不在入侵发生时驾驶 01 机...所以，我成为人类补完计划的触发者完全是巧合。”她再次叹息，意识到自己成为实际触发者的机会有多么渺茫。如果不是那样，她现在应该已经在 LCL 溶液里了。“真嗣...我现在真的很想要一些拥抱。”

They simply held each other for 20 minutes, enjoying each other's warmth. The sun was about to disappear below the hills, and they finally decided to get up and go home. "Cmon, Baka. Let's go home."

他们就这样相拥了 20 分钟，享受着彼此的温暖。太阳即将沉入山丘之下，他们终于决定起身回家。“走吧，笨蛋。我们回家。”

Misato would be home very soon."

美里很快就会回家了。

"Tadaima!" Shinji and Asuka both said in unison when they entered their apartment. Rei was absent, supposedly some medical checks at NERV. They saw no one in the living room or dining area, and they almost immediately started making out. However, just five minutes later, they



heard the bathroom door sliding open.

"ただいま！" 真嗣和明日香同时说道，他们走进了公寓。绫波不在，据说是去 NERV 做医疗检查了。他们在客厅和餐厅都没看到人，几乎立刻就开始亲热起来。然而，仅仅五分钟后，他们听到了浴室门滑开的声音。

"Oh shit!" They immediately separated their kiss; Asuka flung over to the couch, grabbed some random manga, and started reading. Shinji simply pulled out his SDAT and plugged the earbuds in. Misato came out; seeing her kids red-faced, and in messy clothes, she immediately realized what has happened. She decided to tease them a bit. "Well, well, it's so hot today, don't you think?"

"哦，糟了！" 他们立刻分开，明日香迅速扑向沙发，抓起一本随机漫画开始阅读。真嗣则简单地拿出他的 SDAT，插上耳机。美里走了出来；看到孩子们脸红且衣衫不整，她立刻意识到发生了什么。她决定逗逗他们。"哎呀，今天真热，你们不觉得吗？"

"Ah, yes, Misato-san, what do you want for dinner?" Shinji said, trying hard to divert the subject.

"啊，是的，美里小姐，您晚餐想吃什么？" 真嗣努力试图转移话题。

"Hmmm, ramen is fine for me, nothing fancy. Shin-chan, I know you're very busy already trying to feed 4 mouths, and I'm sure you don't wanna feed one more mouth 10 months later, do you?" Misato said in an evil grin.

"嗯，拉面就行，我不挑。真嗣，我知道你已经很忙了，要养活四张嘴，而且我敢肯定你不想在十个月后再多喂一张嘴，对吧？" 美里带着邪恶的笑容说道。

"hey! Just what the hell are you implying by that!" Asuka's face turned redder.

"嘿！你到底在暗示什么！" 明日香的脸变得更红了。

"Ahh, nothing. Just be sure to sue protection." Misato teased, running away from some potential undesirable physical contact.

"啊，没什么。只是记得要做好防护措施。" 美里调侃道，躲开了可能的不愉快身体接触。

Just like she thought, Asuka shot up from the couch and yelled, "PERVERT! HENTAI!" and started chasing Misato, her fist clenching.

正如她所料，明日香从沙发上猛地跳起，大喊着“变态！色狼！”并开始追赶美里，拳头紧握。

Shinji just sat there and watched the whole scene. "I'll never hear the end of it..."

真嗣只是坐在那里，看着整个场景。“我永远也摆脱不了这个话题了.....”

Although she had always hated it, it was time for Asuka to go back to school; starting from Monday, which would be today. Shinji had already returned to school for a week; the rumors about his outburst  
尽管她一直讨厌上学，但明日香不得不回到学校；从周一开始，也就是今天。真嗣已经返校一周了；关于他爆发的谣言

that day hadn't died down yet. Every time people saw him, they shot him sympathetic looks; but they were surprised to see that Shinji was acting very happily. Why wasn't he sad?

那天的事情还没有平息。每次人们看到他，都会投以同情的目光；但他们惊讶地发现，真嗣表现得非常开心。他为什么不伤心呢？

Shinji and Asuka put on their shoes and announced their departure. On the way to school, Asuka couldn't help but started worrying. "Hey, Shinji! Im kinda excited to see the look on our classmates' faces when I showed up in class!"

真嗣和明日香穿上鞋子，宣布出发。去学校的路上，明日香忍不住开始担心。

“嘿，真嗣！我有点兴奋，想看看当我出现在教室时，同学们会是什么表情！”

Shinji chuckled, "Well, I still remember how Toji and Kensuke reacted..."

真嗣轻笑道：“嗯，我还记得当时阿薰和健介的反应.....”

"Hmpf, those two stooges just overreacted. They were your friends, anyway. They probably didn't like me, but they certainly cared about you!"  
Asuka pouted, putting her arms at the back of her head. "Actually, I'm more excited to introduce my boyfriend to the class! So that the girls wouldn't harass you anymore!"

"哼，那两个傻瓜就是反应过度。反正他们也是你的朋友。他们可能不喜欢我，但他们肯定在乎你！" 明日香噘着嘴，双手枕在脑后。"其实，我更兴奋的是向全班介绍我的男朋友！这样那些女生就不会再骚扰你了！"

"Asuka, they weren't harassing me anymore after my outburst. Maybe they thought approaching me just after some traumatic event would

simply make me hate them. But now that you are back, and Im really glad to tell everyone in the class that I have a girlfriend."

"明日香，我发火之后他们就没再骚扰我了。也许他们觉得在我经历创伤后接近我会让我更讨厌他们。但现在你回来了，我真的很高兴告诉班上所有人我有女朋友了。"

As they walked closer to the school, they were encountering more and more of their schoolmates. Most of them were simply curiously looking, probably more at the fact that Shinji and Asuka were holding hands than seeing a supposedly dead person. Some of them were jaw-dropped, stood still, and staring hard at the duo. They were believers of Asuka's death, and seeing Asuka again so suddenly was simply too much for them to handle at once. Once Shinji and Asuka entered the school gate, the stares intensified. Wherever they were, people around them fell silent and stared. They were kinda late for the day, tho. Asuka had to go to the principal's office at first to check-in; her student status was deactivated, after all. They met Sensei in the office, who was clearly under shell shock; the principal just informed him that he would have to announce Asuka's return to the class.

随着他们走近学校，遇到的同校同学越来越多。大多数人只是好奇地看着，可能更多的是因为真嗣和明日香手牵手，而不是看到一个本应死去的人。有些人则目瞪口呆，站在原地，死死盯着这对情侣。他们是相信明日香已死的人，突然再次见到明日香，对他们来说一时难以接受。真嗣和明日香一进校门，目光就更加密集了。无论他们走到哪里，周围的人都安静下来，盯着他们看。不过，他们今天有点迟到了。明日香首先得去校长办公室报到；毕竟她的学生身份已经被注销了。他们在办公室遇到了老师，显然老师也处于震惊之中；校长刚刚通知他，他必须向班级宣布明日香的归来。

"... Soryu was dead. Now she just came back alive. I don't know how the students would take this." Sensei said, clearly in disbelief, "Where is Soryu? I may need to brace the class first. Soryu could wait outside the class."

"...惣流已经死了。现在她又活生生地回来了。我不知道学生们会怎么接受。"老师说，显然难以置信，"惣流在哪里？我可能需要先给班级打个预防针。让惣流在教室外等一下。"

"Nebukawa no Sensei," Asuka was never good at respecting elders, "Im Soryu Asuka. What do you want me to do?"

"Nebukawa 老师," 明日香向来不擅长尊敬长辈, "我是惣流·明日香·兰格雷。你想要我做什么?"

Sensei turned around at the familiar voice; his body twitched as his eyes made contact with the more familiar face. "S-Soryu, y-you will wait here until the class starts. Then you may wait outside the class; I will inform the class about your arrival."

听到熟悉的声音, 老师转过身来; 当他的目光与那张更熟悉的脸相遇时, 他的身体不由自主地颤抖了一下。"惣流, 你-你在这里等到上课开始。然后你可以站在教室外面; 我会通知班上你的到来。"

"Yeah, yeah whatever." Asuka found a seat and sat down. "Shinji, you can go now. You don't need to wait for me; besides, you can always give the class a bracing period!"

"是, 是, 随便啦。" 明日香找了个座位坐下。"真嗣, 你可以走了。你不用等我; 再说, 你随时可以给班级一个振奋的时间!"

Shinji nodded and decided to enter the classroom first. After all, Sensei was going to make another fake announcement about Asuka's return; it would probably be a good idea to let Kensuke, Toji, or Hikari spread the news in the chat rooms at first.

真嗣点点头, 决定先进入教室。毕竟, 老师又要发布关于明日香归来的假消息了; 或许让健介、渡治或光希先在聊天室里散布这个消息是个好主意。

Shinji entered the classroom, greeted the trio as usual, and walked straight to his seat. He pulled out his laptop and started typing.

真嗣走进教室, 像往常一样向三人组打招呼, 然后径直走向自己的座位。他拿出笔记本电脑, 开始打字。

Chatroom 03. Guests: Shinji.I, LebronJames, EVAUnit01, Hikari.H

聊天室 03。成员: 真嗣.I、勒布朗詹姆斯、EVA 初号机、光希.H

Shinji.I: Hey guys, Asuka's going back to school today. I want you guys to help me brace the class for it.

真嗣.I: 大家好, 明日香今天要回学校了。我希望你们能帮我让班级做好准备。

Hikari.H: Sure, Shinji-kun. What can I do to help?

光.H: 当然, 真嗣君。我能做些什么来帮忙呢?

LebronJames: OMG the Red Devil is returning? What a nightmare!

Hikari.H: Suzuhara! This is not nice!

勒布朗·詹姆斯: 我的天, 红魔要回来了? 真是噩梦! 光.H: 铃原! 这样不好!

EVAUnit01: ye, Toji. At least she almost died for us. We should show some gratitude.

EVAUnit01: 是啊, 冬二。至少她差点为我们而死。我们应该表示一些感激。

LebronJames: Fine. Sorry about that, Shin-man. Now, what can I

LebronJames: 好吧。抱歉了, 真嗣。现在, 我能做些什么?

do?

Shinji.I: Its ok. Just help me spread the news across different chatrooms. Need brace period.

Shinji.I: 没关系。帮我将消息传播到各个聊天室就行。需要一段时间来适应。

Hikari.H: Got it. LebronJames: Ok

光.H: 明白了。LebronJames: 好的

EVAUnit01: sure EVAUnit01: 当然

Shinji exited the chatroom. A minute later, he could hear the murmur of the class suddenly became an explosive chattering. Many students turned their eyes to look in Shinji's direction; most of them curious. Some of them were looking ready to ask him questions.

真嗣退出了聊天室。一分钟后, 他听到班上的低语声突然变成了激烈的交谈。许多学生转头看向真嗣的方向; 他们大多充满好奇。有些人看起来已经准备好向他提问了。

Shinji was starting to feel nervous; he just hoped things could turn back to normal.

真嗣开始感到紧张; 他只是希望事情能恢复到正常状态。

The bell rang, and Sensei came in. "Rise! Bow! Sit!" Hikari announced. 铃声响起, 老师走了进来。"起立! 鞠躬! 坐下!" 光宣布道。

Sensei pushed his glasses higher, "Hello, class. Today I have an announcement to make. Soryu-san will be back with us." He was about to say "transferred back from Germany," but he knew every student in the class probably knew it was fake. He also didn't want another outburst

from Shinji, so he decided to go on an easier way, although it was against his always-follows-instructions personality.

老师推了推眼镜，“同学们好。今天我有一个通知要宣布。惣流同学将回到我们班。”他本想说“从德国转学回来”，但他知道班上每个学生可能都知道这是假的。他也不想再引起真嗣的爆发，所以他决定采取更简单的方式，尽管这与他一贯遵循指令的性格相悖。

The class immediately exploded into chattering. Asuka saw this as a great opportunity to enter the classroom since the class couldn't really get louder, and she would also draw less attention since the students were distracted in their own chats.

教室里立刻炸开了锅，叽叽喳喳声四起。明日香看准了这个绝佳时机走进教室，毕竟课堂已经不可能更吵了，而且学生们各自聊得正欢，她也不会太引人注意。

As Asuka proudly walked into the classroom, the chattering suddenly  
明日香骄傲地走进教室时，原本的嘈杂声突然

fell completely silent. 完全静了下来。

'Mein Gott, this is not what I thought would happen.' Asuka quickly walked to her old seat and sat down as if everything was normal.

“我的天，这可不是我预料中的情况。”明日香迅速走向她以前的座位，坐了下来，仿佛一切如常。

"S-s-s-Soryu-san," A girl in the corner finally spoke up after a long and awkward silence, "we thought you were... err... Shinji-kun said..."

"S-s-s-Soryu-san," 角落里的一个女孩在漫长而尴尬的沉默后终于开口了，  
“我们以为你.....呃.....真嗣君说.....”

"Well, I'm not! Is me sitting here and talking not enough to convince you that I'm alive?" Asuka said back; she was clearly irritated by the hundreds of new messages that appeared in her inbox.

“好吧，我不是！我坐在这里说话还不足以证明我还活着吗？”明日香回道；她显然被收件箱里突然出现的大量新消息惹恼了。

"B-b-but Shinji-kun said..." Another male student spoke up.

"但、但是真嗣君说过....." 另一位男同学开口说道。

"Ahem, how about this?" Asuka decided to do something to settle the thing once forever since she didn't want to deal with this anymore. "I am

alive because I am a clone of my original body! Is that enough for you?  
Now just leave me alone!"

"咳咳，这样如何？" 明日香决定做点什么来彻底解决这件事，因为她再也不想处理这些了。"我之所以活着，是因为我是我原身的克隆体！这样够了吗？现在请让我一个人待着！"

The class fell silent again. Shinji was clearly taken aback by her statement, "A-Asuka, what the..." Asuka gave him several blinks; Shinji immediately understood her meaning. "what the hell? You are not supposed to tell them!"

班级再次陷入沉默。真嗣显然被她的话震惊了，"明日香，你这....." 明日香对他眨了几下眼；真嗣立刻明白了她的意思。"搞什么鬼？你不该告诉他们的！"

The class exploded again.

班级再次炸开了锅。

The rumors were spreading like wildfire across the campus.

谣言如野火般在校园里蔓延。

"Hey dude, ya know what? That hot German Eva pilot from class-2A is a fucking clone!"

"嘿，哥们，你知道吗？2A 班那个超辣的德国 Eva 驾驶员是个他妈的克隆人！"

"No fucking way! So she's not even human? What the fuck! I even thought about dating her! Jesus!"

"不可能！所以她甚至不是人类？搞什么鬼！我甚至还考虑过和她约会！天哪！"

"Ye, right! Gotta get away from her..."

"是啊，没错！得离她远点....."

"And that male pilot seems to be dating her! I saw they held hands this morning!"

"那个男飞行员似乎在和她约会！我早上看到他们牵手了！"

"Maybe he's a clone as well... freaks find freaks..."

"也许他也是个克隆人.....怪胎吸引怪胎....."

"Hey, you can't be serious! This is not some kind of sci-fi movie! I bet she was just joking!"

"嘿，你不能当真！这可不是什么科幻电影！我打赌她只是在开玩笑！"

"Well, we have those giant robots defending us! Does that sound sci-fi enough? And she's a pilot of those things! I'm not surprised that they have backups for pilots! It's almost logical!"

"好吧，我们有那些巨型机器人保护我们！这听起来够科幻了吧？而且她就是那些机器人的驾驶员！我不奇怪他们为驾驶员准备了备份！这几乎合乎逻辑！"

"Tru man, I kinda agree with ya. I mean, if those robots are crucial to humanities' survival, they wouldn't just have one pilot for each! It's reasonable that they have clones for their pilots!"

"说真的，我有点同意你的看法。我是说，如果那些机器人对人类的生存至关重要，它们不可能每个都只有一个驾驶员！有驾驶员的克隆体是很合理的！"

...

The rumors were still hot after a full week. To Asuka's surprise, the number of boys harassing her declined exponentially. Although before she would have felt disappointed that people were ignoring, almost avoiding her, since her pride would have been hurt. Now tho, she simply felt happy that she finally could spend more time with Shinji. The number of girls approaching Shinji also diminished significantly; since they thought that Shinji was also an Eva pilot, there would be a large chance that he was a clone as well. The decline of attention from other people in the school didn't annoy the pilots; quite the opposite, they felt relaxed and happy. They still had their friends, after all.

谣言在整整一周后依然热度不减。令明日香惊讶的是，骚扰她的男生数量急剧下降。虽然以前她可能会因为人们忽视甚至避开她而感到失望，因为她的自尊心会受到伤害。但现在，她只是感到高兴，因为她终于可以有更多时间与真嗣相处了。接近真嗣的女生数量也大幅减少；因为她们认为真嗣也是 EVA 驾驶员，很可能他也是个克隆体。学校里其他人关注的减少并没有让驾驶员们感到烦恼；相反，他们感到轻松和快乐。毕竟，他们还有朋友。

At least, they would still have each other. It was a sunny day in Tokyo-3. 至少，他们还有彼此。东京-3 的天气晴朗。

Every student in the classroom quickly got out of their seats the second the lunch bell rang, leaving Sensei standing in front of the class.

午餐铃一响，教室里的每个学生都迅速离开座位，留下老师站在讲台前。



"Shinji," He waved to him, "could you come here for a second?"

"真嗣，" 他向他招手，"你能过来一下吗？"

Shinji remembered this particular exchange. He stood up and walked to the Sensei.

真嗣记得这次特别的对话。他站起来，走向老师。

"I've noticed that you have been doing well in your studies these past few weeks." He praised, but his expression still plain, "I was thinking about arranging a meeting with your father to discuss the possibility of advanced education."

"我注意到你这几周的学习成绩一直很好。" 他称赞道，但表情依旧平淡，"我在考虑安排一次与你父亲的会面，讨论一下深造的可能性。"

Shinji has already expected this. But now the teacher was offering something different, much more advanced than in his timeline. It was logical that he had good grades; he had already done those tests for once, after all. "My... father?"

真嗣对此已有预料。但现在老师提出的是一个与他所在时空截然不同、更为先进的选择。他的成绩优异是理所当然的，毕竟他已经经历过那些考试。"我.....父亲？"

"I know, I know. He's a busy man." Sensei said, "But your education is important."

"我知道，我知道。他是个大忙人。" 老师说，"但你的教育很重要。"

Shinji slowly turned his head to see Asuka leaning against the doorway with her arms crossed, waiting for him.

真嗣缓缓转过头，看到明日香双臂交叉倚在门口，正等着他。

"Umm." Shinji started to scratch his head. "I... guess I'll talk to him..." He was not really agreeing to the Sensei; he simply wanted not to keep Asuka waiting longer. He could talk with Miasto about this; she was his guardian as well.

"呃。" 真嗣开始挠头。"我.....我想我会去跟他谈谈....." 他并非真的同意老师的话；他只是不想让明日香等太久。 he可以和美里谈谈这件事；她也是他的监护人。

Shinji and Asuka walked slowly back home. Just as they were about to enter the door, Shinji suddenly remembered something important. 'I

remember something had happened the day I called my father for my teacher's arrangement... oh right, the power outage, and the Angel.'

"Asuka, I think today should be the day when the Angel attacked."

真嗣和明日香慢慢走回家。就在他们即将进门时，真嗣突然想起了重要的事情。

“我记得那天我为了老师的安排给父亲打电话时发生了什么事.....对了，停电，还有使徒。” “明日香，我想今天应该是使徒袭击的日子。”

Asuka blinked, and remembered as well. "Scheisse! You're right! Let's go to the Geofront now!" They quickly turned around and knocked at Rei's apartment's door. Rei came out seconds later, "Hello, Shinji-kun, Hello, Asuka-chan."

明日香眨了眨眼，也想起来了。“该死！你说得对！我们现在就去地底都市！”他们迅速转身，敲响了绫波的公寓门。几秒钟后，绫波走了出来，“你好，真嗣君，你好，明日香。”

"Rei, you need to go to the Geofront with us now!" Shinji said worriedly.

“绫波，你现在得跟我们去地底都市！”真嗣担忧地说道。

"That is... agreeable," Rei said, "we have a sync test tonight. I was

“那.....可以，”绫波说，“今晚我们有同步测试。我本来.....”

about to depart 30 minutes later."

即将在 30 分钟后出发。

"Great, now just get going!" Asuka grabbed Shinji's wrist and dragged him along. Rei followed them swiftly. The pilots exited the building and ran towards a group of Section 2 guards.

“太好了，现在赶紧走吧！”明日香抓住真嗣的手腕，拉着他一起跑。绫波紧随其后。驾驶员们冲出大楼，向一群第二支部警卫跑去。

"Abort the test." Dr. Akagi groaned, "Break the circuits and start from procedure 188 agai-"

“终止测试。”赤木博士叹息道，“切断电路，从第 188 号程序重新开始——”

There was sudden darkness in the room. The screens darkened and shut down. The green circuits showing successful connections turned black. 房间里突然陷入一片黑暗。屏幕变暗并关闭了。显示连接成功的绿色电路也变黑了。

"Main power has shut down." Maya announced, "The voltage is  
"主电源已关闭。" 玛雅宣布道， "电压为"

zero." 零。 "

People were staring at Dr. Akagi, waiting for answers. Ritsuko dropped  
some cold sweat. "I... I didn't do that."

人们盯着赤木律子博士，等待着答案。律子冒出了冷汗。 "我.....我没有做那件事。 "

NERV Headquarters was one of the most technologically advanced  
facilities in the world. The possibility of a power outage would be virtually  
zero.

NERV 总部是世界上最先进的科技设施之一。停电的可能性几乎为零。

"Where's the backup generator then?"

"那备用发电机在哪里? "

There was silence as the technician used the remaining battery power on  
his computer to investigate. "It's dead too."

技术人员利用电脑剩余的电量进行检查，四周一片寂静。 "它也死了。 "

"No way!" Sub-commander Fuyutsuki said, "Are there any working  
circuits?"

"不可能! " 副指挥官冬月说， "还有能用的电路吗? "

"Only one pint two percent working," Maya replied, "and they are old  
circuits before circuit number 2567."

"只有百分之二点五能用， " 真希波回答， "而且都是 2567 号电路之前的旧线路。 "

"Draw all of our remaining power to MAGI and central dogma,"

"将我们剩余的所有能量转移到 MAGI 和中心法则上， "

Fuyutsuki ordered, "Ignore the air conditioning. This is the most  
冬月命令道， "忽略空调系统。这是最

important thing! " 重要的事情! "

The pilots ran towards the entrance of the Geofront, and were frustrated  
to see that the power had already gone out. Asuka still stubbornly slid her  
ID card across the machine, and as expected, nothing happened.

飞行员们奔向地底都市的入口，却发现电源已经断开，感到十分沮丧。明日香仍然固执地将她的 ID 卡在机器上划过，不出所料，什么也没有发生。

"Perhaps the power is out." Rei proposed.

“也许电源断了。” 绫波提议道。

"Yeah, I've noticed," She replied snidely. "Wonder girl, what do you propose we do then?"

“是啊，我已经注意到了。” 她尖刻地回应，“奇迹少女，那你有什么建议呢？”

Just as Shinji was about to speak up, Rei interrupted him. "There is an alternate route into NERV that bypasses these gates."

正当真嗣准备开口时，绫波打断了他。“有一条绕过这些大门的通往 NERV 的备用路线。”

"Okay then, Wondergirl." Asuka said, "Lead the way then." Although she had already experienced this before, she still couldn't beat Rei at find routes inside the Geofront, that she's sure of.

“好吧，奇迹少女。” 明日香说道，“带路吧。” 尽管她之前已经体验过一次，但她仍然无法在地下都市中找到比绫波更快的路线，这一点她很确定。

"As you wish." Rei replied, starting to make her way down the hall to the right. The Second and Third Children remained close behind the blue-haired girl while she guided them through the maze of halls.

“如你所愿。” 绫波回答道，开始向右边的走廊走去。二号和三号适格者紧随在蓝发少女身后，由她带领着穿过迷宫般的走廊。

"I'm still impressed that wonder girl just knows this place so well." The redhead whispered to Shinji.

“我还是对小奇迹女孩对这里如此熟悉感到惊讶。” 红发女孩低声对真嗣说。

"Maybe she's been here long enough..." Shinji said, "or maybe she has a photographic memory or something."

“也许她在这里待得够久了.....” 真嗣说，“或者她有照相记忆之类的能力。”

They walked for a little longer to enter a large chamber.

他们又走了一会儿，进入了一个宽敞的大厅。

"Everyone listen!" A voice echoed above them. The three teens looked up and could see what looked to be headlights passing by over all of the

gratings.

"大家听好了！"一个声音在他们上方回荡。三个少年抬头望去，可以看到像是车灯的东西在所有格栅上方掠过。

"Is that..." Asuka squinted her eyes as she started listening to the voice carefully. "Hyuga?"

"那是..." 明日香眯起眼睛，开始仔细聆听那个声音。"日向吗？"

"I think so." Shinji confirmed.

"我想是的。"真嗣确认道。

"An Angel is coming!" He shouted, his voice traveling through the darkened halls. "I repeat, an Angel is coming!"

"天使降临了！"他喊道，声音穿透了昏暗的走廊。"我再说一遍，天使降临了！"

"Yeah, already knew that coming..." Asuka sighed, "We must hurry up then..."

"嗯，早就知道了....." 明日香叹了口气，"那我们得快点了....."

"Hmph." Fuyutsuki shook his head. "Of all times there could be an Angel attack, it has to be now."

"哼。" 冬月摇了摇头。"偏偏在这种时候有使徒来袭。"

Gendo slowly raised himself from his seat. "I'm going to launch the EVAs manually." He said to the Vice Commander, his tone void of any real emotion.

源堂缓缓从座位上起身。"我将手动发射 EVA。"他对副司令说道，语气中不带任何真实情感。

Gendo turned to face Fuyutsuki as he made his way to the ladder leading to the cages. If the Vice Commander didn't know any better, he could've sworn he saw a smile on Commander Ikari's face. "We have a diesel-powered generator for launching the EVAs in case of emergencies." He snickered. "I guess we're going to finally get to test it out and see if it works."

源堂转身面对着冬月，走向通往驾驶舱的梯子。如果副司令没有看错的话，他几乎可以发誓看到碇司令的脸上露出了一丝微笑。"我们有柴油发电机用于紧急情况下发射 EVA。"他轻笑道，"看来我们终于有机会测试它是否有效了。"

"But where are the pilots?" Fuyutsuki asked.

"但驾驶员在哪里？" 冬月问道。

"Section 2 had reported 30 minutes ago that they picked up the pilots to the Geofront for sync tests. They should be here any moment." Gendo said, "But we still have someone important missing."

第 2 部分 30 分钟前报告称，他们已将飞行员带到 Geofront 进行同步测试。他们应该随时会到。" 源堂说道，"但我们还有一位重要人物尚未出现。"

"Where's Captain Katsuragi?"

葛城上尉在哪里？

"It's hot even with all the clothes off..." Misato grumbled as she used her fanning hand to cool herself down.

"即使脱掉了所有衣服，还是热得要命....." 美里一边抱怨，一边用手扇风试图降温。

"Cuz the air conditioning also shut down," Kaji said with a sly grin.

"Katsuragi, take your shirt off if you can't stand the heat."

"因为空调也停了，" 加持带着狡黠的笑容说。"葛城，要是热得受不了就把衬衫脱了吧。"

The lavender-haired woman threw a glare at her ex-lover. "Don't think about anything like that right now!"

紫发的女子向她的前恋人投去一瞥怒视。"现在别想那些乱七八糟的事！"

"It'll cool you off." He shrugged. "And it's not like I haven't seen it before."

"那样会让你凉快些。" 他耸耸肩。"再说，我又不是没见过。"

Feeling disgusted, Misato pulled her jacket back on and zipped it up. She'd rather sweat to death than humor him.

感到厌恶的 Misato 重新穿上她的夹克并拉上拉链。她宁愿热死也不愿迎合他。

The three pilots still had to use the ventilation shaft to go to the command center. Of course this time Asuka didn't mind Shinji crouching behind her. A part of her actually wanted Shinji to look; she then realized that Shinji had already seen much more. They soon arrived at the top of the command deck.

三位驾驶员仍需通过通风管道前往指挥中心。当然，这次 Asuka 并不介意 Shinji

蹲在她身后。她的一部分甚至希望 Shinji 能看；随后她意识到 Shinji 已经见过更多了。他们很快到达了指挥甲板的顶部。

Below the vents, Ritsuko began looking around. "What on Earth was that?"  
在通风口下方，Ritsuko 开始四处查看。 “那到底是什么？”

Maya began searching for the source of the noise as well. "It sounds like it's coming from above us."

玛雅也开始寻找噪音的来源。 “听起来像是从我们上方传来的。”

The shaft was kicked open, and three pilots jumped off, each of them making perfect landings.

舱门被踢开，三名驾驶员跳了下来，每个人都完美着陆。

"We were looking for you three!" Ritsuko said, "Right now, we have an Angel attack to worry about."

“我们一直在找你们三个！” 律子说， “现在，我们有使徒袭击要担心。”

"But we don't know the detail of the Angel, nor visual contacts, Dr. Akagi." Rei asked.

“我们对使徒的细节一无所知，也没有任何视觉接触，赤木博士。” 绫波问道。

"Emm, according to the JSSDF, the Angel is a spider-like creature. Nothing too fancy. Now you need to get into your Evas."

“嗯，根据自卫队的情报，使徒是一种类似蜘蛛的生物。没什么特别的。现在你们需要进入 EVA。”

"How are we supposed to pilot our EVAs without any power?"

“没有电力，我们怎么驾驶 EVA 呢？”

"We have a diesel-powered generator in case of emergencies like this."

She explained, pointing towards the rather archaic machine planted on the far side of the room. "The Entry Plugs have to be inserted by hand, though." Ritsuko pointed her finger in the direction of people working hard to pull up the entry plug. Following her pointing, they found Gendo and a bunch other technician pulling the strings, opening the hatch.

“我们有一台柴油发电机，以防这种紧急情况。” 她解释道，指向房间远端那台颇为古老的机器。“不过，插入栓需要手动插入。” 律子用手指向那些正努力拉起插入栓的人们。顺着她的指引，他们看到了碓源堂和其他技术人员正在拉动绳索，打开舱门。

"It's great that our EVAs are ready for launch and all, but how the hell are we supposed to get to the surface without the launch platforms?" Although Asuka had already known the answer, she felt it still had to be asked.

"虽然我们的 EVA 已经准备就绪，随时可以发射，但没有了发射平台，我们到底该怎么到达地面呢？" 尽管明日香已经知道答案，但她觉得这个问题还是得问出来。

"Simple, really." Asuka didn't like the grin Ritsuko was making. "You'll climb."

"其实很简单。" 明日香不喜欢律子脸上露出的那种笑容。"你们得爬上去。"

"This is so lame." The pilot of Unit 02 complained as she led the other two EVA Units through the transport tunnels, crawling on their hands and knees as they made their way to the location of the

"这真是太逊了。" 02 号机驾驶员抱怨着，带领另外两台 EVA 单位穿过运输隧道，他们手脚并用，匍匐前进，前往天使所在的位置。

Angel. 天使。

"It is very inconvenient." Even Rei seemed to be a little bit agitated. "Our battery power will be nearly depleted by the time we reach the Angel at this rate."

"这样非常不便。" 甚至连绫波零似乎也有些焦躁。"照这样下去，我们到达天使那里时，电池能量几乎要耗尽了。"

"Asuka," Shinji called to her. "The end of the shaft is up ahead. We're going to have to kick out the wall to get to the tunnel to the surface."

"明日香，" 真嗣向她喊道。"轴道的尽头就在前面。我们得踢开这堵墙才能进入通往地面的隧道。"

Asuka already knew what she was going to do. Without a word, she kicked hard on the shaft, and the meters-thick metal door bent and fell effortlessly.

明日香早已知道自己要做什么。她一言不发，猛地一脚踢向轴道，那厚达数米的金属门轻易地弯曲并倒下了。

"I think we need to wait for the Angel to show its weaknesses," Asuka said; she was waiting for the Angel to drop its first wave of acids, tho. They then saw some orange-ish liquid fell down the



"我觉得我们需要等待使徒暴露出它的弱点，" 明日香说道；她正等待着使徒释放第一波酸液。随后，他们看到一些橙色的液体从上方滴落下来。

tunnel in front of them.

他们面前的隧道。

"Now it's the time!" Asuka exclaimed, pulling out her rifle. She quickly crawled out of the tunnel and aimed at the Angel. The rain of bullets flew up and torn the soft tissues of the Angel apart. The Angel screamed in pain and fell to the ground.

“现在正是时候！”明日香大喊一声，拔出步枪。她迅速爬出隧道，瞄准使徒。子弹如雨般射出，撕裂了使徒柔软的组织。使徒痛苦地尖叫着，倒在地上。

"That was... much easier than I thought," Asuka murmured, but she soon composed herself. "Look at this! The Angel never stood a chance against the great Soryu Asuka Langley!"

“这比我想象的要容易得多，”明日香低声自语，但她很快恢复了镇定。“看吧！使徒在伟大的惣流·明日香·兰格雷面前毫无胜算！”

The Angel's body busted open into a pool of flowing red LCL. The cascade of the blood-like liquid drenched the EVA Units as it flooded the chute, seeping all the way down to the GeoFront, dripping onto NERV Headquarters.

天使的躯体爆裂开来，化作一滩流动的红色 LCL。这股血色液体如瀑布般淹没了 EVA 机体，涌入通道，一直渗透到地底都市，滴落在 NERV 总部上方。

"It looks like they killed it." Fuyutsuki commented as he watched the LCL drain onto the grassy field of the GeoFront.

“看来他们成功了。”副司令冬月注视着 LCL 流入地底都市的草地，评论道。

"Did you doubt them?" Commander Ikari threw his eyes over to the Vice Commander. He simply shook his head. "Not at all."

“你怀疑过他们吗？”碇司令将目光投向副司令。后者只是摇了摇头，“一点也没有。”

Tokyo-3 remained shrouded in darkness as the moon rose and the blanket of the night took over. Asuka, Shinji, and Rei sat back on a grassy ledge overlooking the sleeping city, the illumination from the moon and stars bringing a faint light to the metropolis below. Asuka and Shinji still decided to enjoy the review once more, since this was not something that

they could see regularly.

东京-3 依旧笼罩在黑暗之中，随着月亮升起，夜幕完全降临。明日香、真嗣和绫波坐在一片草坡上，俯瞰着沉睡的城市，月光和星光为下方的都市带来一丝微弱的光亮。明日香和真嗣决定再次欣赏这番景象，毕竟这不是他们能经常看到的。

"There sure are a lot of stars out tonight." Shinji commented, looking up at the blackness of night. He heard a huff from Asuka, who was laying down on the ground next to him, her hands behind her head and one leg crossed over the other.

“今晚的星星真多啊。”真嗣抬头望着夜空说道。他听到旁边的明日香哼了一声，她正躺在地上，双手枕在脑后，一条腿交叉搭在另一条腿上。

"There are always that many stars out, Baka-Shinji." She said, rolling her eyes. "It's just that you the city's light pollution wiped them out."

“星星一直那么多，笨蛋真嗣。”她翻了个白眼说，“只是城市的光污染把它们遮住了。”

The blue-haired pilot of Unit 00 leaned back, joining them in their stargazing. "I enjoy it like this." The other two pilots stared at her, 零号机那蓝发的驾驶员向后靠去，加入了他们观星的行列。“我喜欢这样。”另外两位驾驶员看着她，

surprised to hear her actually contribute to the conversation. "I like being able to see the stars, and... being with my friends."

惊讶于她竟然主动参与了对话。“我喜欢能看到星星，还有.....和朋友们在一起。”

"Yeah, I agree with the 'with my friends part,' wonder girl." The redhead replied, looking back at the darkened city. "But I don't enjoy the darkness. I need bright lights. It makes me feel at home."

“是啊，我同意‘和朋友们在一起’那部分，奇迹女孩。”红发的那位回应道，目光转回那昏暗的城市。“但我并不喜欢黑暗。我需要明亮的灯光。那让我感觉像在家一样。”

"Why's that?" Shinji asked, leaning his back on the grass and resting his hands behind his head.

“为什么这么说？”真嗣问道，背靠在草地上，双手枕在脑后。

"I lived in Berlin." She answered. "It's always bright there. Even at night."

“我在柏林住过。”她回答。“那里总是很明亮。即使在夜晚。”

Shinji tried not to make any stupid comments, but soon found him speechless. After all, he was not good at catching up on conversations. 真嗣尽量不发表任何愚蠢的评论，但很快发现自己无言以对。毕竟，他不擅长跟上对话的节奏。

Asuka clearly sensed Shinji's struggle. She chuckled and continued her talk. "Well, although I lived there for a long time, I still couldn't really see the whole city like this." She turned her head towards Shinji. "I've been training to become an EVA pilot since I was eight years old. Day in and day out was just schooling, endless studying, physical training, and simulation tests." Rei began to avert her eyes from the sky and looked over at the pilot of Unit 02. "The closest I ever got to actually seeing what it was actually like to live in Berlin was at night when I would go to bed." She began to lean up, resting her elbow on the ground and propping her head on her palm. "I could look out my window and see all of the bright lights and all of the people walking around on the sidewalks. They all looked like they were having so much fun." Asuka started to frown. "They looked like they were..."

明日香明显察觉到了真嗣的挣扎。她轻笑一声，继续说道：“嗯，虽然我在那里生活了很久，但像这样俯瞰整个城市的机会还是不多。”她转向真嗣，“我从八岁起就开始接受成为 EVA 驾驶员的训练。日复一日，不过是上学、无尽的学习、体能训练和模拟测试。”绫波也开始将目光从天空移开，转向了 02 号机驾驶员。“我离真正了解柏林的生活最近的时候，是在夜晚入睡前。”她开始坐起身，手肘撑地，手掌托着头，“我可以透过窗户看到外面璀璨的灯光和人行道上熙熙攘攘的人群。他们看起来都那么快乐。”明日香眉头微皱，“他们看起来就像是.....”

"Happy?" Rei finished, causing the redhead to turn around and face her. She didn't snap at her, nor did she feel any malice towards Rei for cutting her off. She was just far too stunned by how right she was. "I know what that feels like." Rei took in a deep breath. "To look at everyone around you and see that even in times as dark as the

"开心吗？" 丽结束了话题，让红发女孩转过身来面对她。她没有对丽发火，也没有对她打断自己感到任何恶意。她只是被丽说得如此准确而震惊。"我知道那种感觉。" 丽深吸了一口气。"看着周围的人，即使在像我们现在这样黑暗的时刻，他们仍然在微笑。仍然快乐。仍然....."

ones we live in now, they are still smiling. Still cheerful. Still...  
快乐。

happy." 幸福。

"But now, I have found my happiness," Asuka smiled at Shinji, "What'd you say, Baka?"

“但现在，我找到了我的幸福，”明日香对真嗣微笑道，“你说呢，笨蛋？”

Shinji smiled back, reaching out a hand to take hold of Asuka's. "Never been happier ever."

真嗣回以微笑，伸出手握住了明日香的手。“从未如此幸福过。”

Down in the metropolis of Tokyo-3, lights began to flicker as the city came back to life. Soon its brightness drowned out the stars above, but in turn, brought light to where there was once darkness.

在东京-3 这座大都会的深处，灯光开始闪烁，城市逐渐恢复生机。很快，它的光芒淹没了上方的星辰，但同时也为曾经黑暗的地方带来了光明。

AN: yes, back to the canon. Not really into writing combat scenes, tho. But I will emphasize it when needed, like for 13th, 14th, and 16th. The next chapter may take longer to upload. Probably a week or so.

作者注：是的，回归正典。虽然我不太擅长写战斗场景，但必要时（如第 13、14 和 16 章）我会着重描写。下一章可能需要更长时间上传，大概一周左右。

---

## Chapter 9: An Angel's Invasion

AN: A relatively short chapter. Just a clarification: thanks for all of your comments. And the purposes of this fanfic are to give Asuka and Shinji some happiness since I was pissed off when first seeing 3.0+ 1.0 spoilers. It's natural to feel their adventures are too easy, because it's my intention. Anyways, their Angelic abilities won't help much when fighting the Angels, and I'm planning to have some new traumas for them. Some of the scenes I wrote only for fun. And yes, I got the idea of "Israfil Special" from Advice and Trust by Panther2G. Not saying I'm gonna do it, tho.

作者注：这一章相对较短。先澄清一下：感谢大家的所有评论。这篇同人文的目的是为了让明日香和真嗣获得一些幸福，因为我第一次看到 3.0+1.0 的剧透时非常生气。他们冒险过程显得过于轻松是自然的，因为这是我的意图。无论如何，

他们在对抗使徒时，天使般的能力并不会有多大帮助，我计划给他们带来一些新的创伤。我写的一些场景纯粹是为了好玩。没错，“Israfel 特别篇”的灵感来自 Panther2G 的《Advice and Trust》。不过，我并没有说一定会这么做。

And I'm not going to abuse their Angelic powers; but of course I'm gonna have fun!

我不会滥用他们的天使之力；但当然，我得好好享受一番！

## Chapter 9: An Angel's Invasion

### 第九章：天使的入侵

SEELE 02: "Ikari, the construction of Unit D is completed. I intend you to use it effectively. Unit D is also made from Lilith, therefore capable of initiating Instrumentality if an S2 organ is acquired."

SEELE 02: "碇，D 型机的建造已经完成。我希望你能有效利用它。D 型机同样由莉莉丝制成，因此一旦获得 S2 机关，便能启动人类补完计划。"

SEELE 01: "Ikari, we need to make sure the scenario is not threatened. We need Unit D to ensure it, not endanger it. Is that understood?"

SEELE 01: "碇，我们必须确保计划不受威胁。我们需要 D 型机来保障这一点，而非危及它。明白了吗？"

Ikari: "Yes. I had Doctor Akagi to make sure no anomalies were detected from the Second Child; however, we still can't trust her too much yet. The Second Child is easy to control; she had no other purpose in her life other than piloting an Eva. And I'll use the Second Child to make sure the Third Child act as we planned, seeing they had developed a relationship."

碇: "是的。我已让赤木博士确保从第二适格者身上未检测到异常；然而，我们仍不能完全信任她。第二适格者易于控制；她除了驾驶 Eva 外别无他求。我将利用第二适格者确保第三适格者按我们的计划行事，鉴于他们已建立了关系。"

SEELE 07: "Good, Gendo. But there's still no soul inside Unit D; how can you make sure that those two pilots will synchronize with the

SEELE 07: "很好，碇。但 D 型机内仍无灵魂；你如何确保这两名驾驶员能与

Unit as good as in their respective Evas?"

各台 Eva 的同步率都一样高吗？

Ikari: "We will use the core of Unit 01. Since the Second and Third Children had performed an astonishingly high sync ratio during their first battle

together inside Unit 02, I am sure they will do well. My son may still pilot Unit D solely if needed."

碇司令：“我们将使用初号机的核心。由于二号机内二号和三号适格者在首次协同作战中展现出了惊人的高同步率，我相信他们能表现出色。如有必要，我的儿子仍将单独驾驶 D 型机。”

SEELE 01: "Excellent. Keep an eye on any possible disturbances, Ikari."

SEELE 01：“很好。碇司令，密切关注任何可能的干扰。”

"What do you mean that you are gonna deactivate Unit 01?" Asuka shouted; she couldn't believe what she thought she had heard.

"你什么意思，你要停用 01 号机？" 明日香喊道；她无法相信自己所听到的。

Although her mental state had improved a lot by being with Shinji, she still felt a wave of uncontrollable anger shot up her body as she heard that her boyfriend's Eva Unit would be taken away, which means she would have to fight without the person she trusted the most. Shinji was also shocked to hear the announcement; after all, why would they deactivate a perfectly fine Eva Unit? Not to mention Unit 01 was critical to whatever scenario that his father or SEELE were planning, right? Also, this was nothing like what had happened in his timeline. And he was sure that this hadn't happened in Asuka's timeline as well, since the look in her eyes, the hurt, the disbelief, and the anger were not faked. They were real.

尽管与真嗣在一起后她的精神状态有了很大改善，但当她听说男友的 EVA 将被带走时，一股无法控制的愤怒还是涌上了她的心头，这意味着她将不得不在没有最信任的人的情况下战斗。真嗣听到这个消息也感到震惊；毕竟，为什么要停用一台完好无损的 EVA 呢？更不用说 01 号机对他的父亲或 SEELE 的任何计划都至关重要，对吧？而且这与他在自己时间线上的经历完全不同。他确信这在明日香的时间线上也没有发生过，因为她的眼神、痛苦、怀疑和愤怒都不是装出来的。它们是真实的。

"Calm down a bit, will you Asuka? Let me finish first!" Misato raised her volume, trying to sound commanding, "NERV Berlin will be transporting a new Eva Unit D to us. And we'll put Unit 01's core inside Unit D, sounds good?"

"冷静点，明日香，好吗？让我先说完！" 美里提高了音量，试图显得有威严，"柏林 NERV 将运送一台新的 EVA D 型机给我们。我们会把 01 号机的核心放入 D 型机中，听起来不错吧？"

"Misato-san, why the change? Wasn't Unit 01 good enough?" Shinji tried to stand by Asuka's side, and this was really all he could do.

"美里小姐，为什么要换？01 号机不是挺好的吗？" 真嗣试图站在明日香身边，这已经是他能做的全部了。

"Unit D features a dual-piloting system. That means you two will be piloting the same Unit, considering your excellent sync ratios in the sortie against Gahgiel, and it also has some advanced or experimental weaponry and sensors."

"D 型机配备了双驾驶系统。这意味着你们两人将共同驾驶同一台机体，考虑到你们在对抗加吉尔时的出色同步率，而且它还装备了一些先进的或实验性的武器和传感器。"

Asuka had calmed down a lot hearing that she would not be separated from her boyfriend in battles. "Hmph, you could say that at

"听到自己不会在战斗中与男友分开，明日香的情绪平复了许多。"哼，你倒是可以在....."

first!" Asuka felt thrilled at the idea of piloting alongside her love, "But I guess I can forgive you for that, considering I kinda like that idea.

第一！" 明日香对于能与心爱的人并肩驾驶感到兴奋，"不过考虑到我有点喜欢这个主意，我猜我可以原谅你这一点。

And one more thing, it has to be RED!"

还有一件事，必须是红色的！

Misato chuckled and sighed in relief. She had finished the most challenging part of the announcement; she was pretty surprised that Asuka didn't try to strangle her immediately after she heard the news.

"Aight, and Shinji, you'll still be able to pilot Unit D alone if needed.

Anyways, it should be here tomorrow. Then you two will have your first activation test in Unit D together. Cool?"

美里轻笑一声，松了口气。她已经完成了最难的部分——宣布这个消息；她很惊讶明日香在听到这个消息后没有立刻试图掐死她。"好了，真嗣，如果需要的话，你仍然可以单独驾驶 D 型机。不管怎样，它应该明天就到了。然后你们俩将在 D 型机中进行首次联合激活测试。酷吗？

"Hai." The pilots said in unison.

"海。" 驾驶员们齐声说道。

The day moved on rather quickly. The squeaks of cicadas echoed in Rei's apartment; she had been increasingly sensitive to her surroundings after she had stopped taking the drugs. Now, Rei was alone in her apartment, thinking. She had made several new observations on her fellow pilots, and she intended to converse with them directly. 'Shinji-Kun and Soryu-san's actions around each other were... fascinating to observe. Their AT-Fields almost shine around each other. I wonder what that feeling is. I wish to experience the emotion myself.' Having made a decision, Rei stood up and came to the Katsuragi Residence. She was tempted to press the doorbell, but she then remembered that now she had the key; it was a sign of trust in her. Rei liked the sensation of being trusted, so she decided to not waste the trust the other had given her. She took out the keycard and opened the door with it.

日子过得相当快。蝉鸣声在丽的小公寓里回响；自从她停止服用药物后，她对周围环境的敏感度越来越高。现在，丽独自一人在她的公寓里沉思。她对其他驾驶员有了一些新的观察，并打算直接与他们交流。'真嗣君和明日香之间的互动.....观察起来很有趣。他们的 AT 力场几乎在彼此周围闪耀。我想知道那种感觉是什么。我希望自己也能体验到那种情感。'下定决心后，丽站起身来到葛城家。她本想按门铃，但随即记起自己现在有钥匙；这是对她的信任的象征。丽喜欢被信任的感觉，因此她决定不辜负他人的信任。她拿出钥匙卡，用它打开了门。

Ayanami entered the living room. Misato was having another beer while Shinji and Asuka watched TV together.

绫波走进客厅。美里正在喝另一罐啤酒，而真嗣和明日香则一起看着电视。

"Hello, Captain Katsuragi. Hello, Shinji-Kun. Hello, Soryu-san." Rei greeted the trio.

The three of them were clearly surprised; normally, they would hear doorbells or "Tadaima." Shinji jerked his head in the direction of Rei, "Ah, Hi, Rei! Emm..."

他们三人显然感到惊讶；通常情况下，他们会听到门铃声或“我回来了”。真嗣猛地转向绫波的方向，“啊，嗨，绫波！嗯.....”

Asuka interrupted him with a snort, "Hmph, you could always say something before entering the apartment! How does 'Tadaima' sounds to you?"



明日香哼了一声打断他，“哼，你总是可以在进公寓前说点什么！‘我回来了’听起来怎么样？”

"But this is not my home. My apartment is next door." Rei said in a confused tone; certainly, "I'm home" can only be used when entering one's home, right?

“但这不是我的家。我的公寓在隔壁。” 绫波困惑地说；当然，“我回来了”只能用在进入自己家时，对吧？

Misato smiled, "Rei-chan, you don't need to alienate yourself. This is your home; Home is not a physical location; it is where your families are, right?" 美里微笑着说：“丽酱，你不必疏远自己。这里是你的家；家不是一个具体的地点；它是你家人所在的地方，对吧？”

"That is... agreeable," Rei finally said after a few seconds of thinking.

"Great! Now repeat with me, 'I'm home.'"

“那.....可以接受，” 丽在思考了几秒钟后终于说道。“太好了！现在跟我一起说，‘我回来了。’”

"I'm... home," Rei repeated.

“我.....回来了，” 丽重复道。

"Welcome home!" Misato, Shinji and Asuka said in unison.

“欢迎回家！” 美里、真嗣和明日香齐声说道。

Rei blushed a little. She had never felt something like this before; she felt... accepted. She had never needed acceptance since before she had always been alone. She decided this new feeling was pleasant. But now she had something important to do. "Shinji-Kun, Soryu-san, I... I want to have a conversation with you, privately."

绫波微微脸红。她从未有过这样的感觉；她感到.....被接纳了。她从未需要过接纳，因为在那之前她总是独自一人。她觉得这种新感觉很愉快。但现在她有一件重要的事情要做。“真嗣君，惣流同学，我.....我想私下和你们谈谈。”

"Rei, we can talk here. You can trust Misato-san, and I'm sure she can give you useful advice." Shinji said, not sure of what Rei wanted to talk about. He assumed it had something to do with NERV's secrets, or drugs, so she would like to talk to him and Asuka privately.

“绫波，我们可以在这里谈。你可以信任美里小姐，我相信她能给你有用的建

议。”真嗣说道，不太确定绫波想谈什么。他猜测这可能与 NERV 的秘密或药物有关，所以她希望私下和他与明日香谈。

"Yes, wonder girl, you can trust Ms. Hangover here." Asuka mocked, which clearly irritated the drunk adult, "Asuka! I'm not drunk!"

"是的，奇迹女孩，你可以相信这位宿醉女士。"明日香嘲讽道，显然激怒了醉酒的成年人，"明日香！我没醉！"

"Yeah, yeah, keep telling yourself that!" Asuka stuck out her tongue.

"是啊，是啊，继续这样告诉自己吧！"明日香吐了吐舌头。

"Guys, shouldn't we be listening to what Rei here wants to say?" Shinji interrupted the incoming argument between his two

"伙计们，我们不应该听听丽这里想说什么吗？"真嗣打断了即将爆发的争吵。

roommates. He was sure what would happen if he doesn't interfere.  
室友。他确信如果不介入会发生什么。

Misato and Asuka exchanged a glare, decided to listen to Shinji this time.

"Rei, what do you want to say?"

美里和明日香互瞪一眼，决定这次听真嗣的。“丽，你想说什么？”

Rei thought about this for a while and took a deep breath. "Recently, I have been experiencing some new emotions, which confuses me. I... can feel the bond between Shinji-Kun and Soryu-san. Their bond is strong and beyond physical. I wish to experience this bond as

"丽思考了一会儿，深吸一口气。“最近，我体验到了一些新的情感，这让我感到困惑。我.....能感受到真嗣君和惣流之间的纽带。他们的联系强大且超越了肉体。我希望也能体验到这种纽带，就像....."

well."

The trio blinked. Asuka felt a chill ran down her spine, 'What the hell? Is wonder girl trying to steal MY Shinji?' "Ahem, listen, wonder girl. The... bond you are talking about is between two people only! And my Shinji is not for rent!"

三人眨了眨眼。明日香感到一阵寒意窜过脊背，'搞什么鬼？难道奇迹少女想抢走我的真嗣？' "咳咳，听着，奇迹少女。你所说的那种...羁绊，只存在于两个人之间！而我的真嗣可不是用来出租的！"

Misato suddenly started laughing hard, "Hahahahaha! Rei is asking us for advice on relationships! How cute! Hahahaha..."

美里突然放声大笑，“哈哈哈哈哈！丽居然向我们咨询恋爱问题！太可爱了！哈哈哈哈哈...”

Shinji forced himself a nervous laugh, "Asuka! You know I'm yours... but I think we can help her somehow... I mean, Rei longing for a relationship? That's something new! Maybe we can..." Shinji gave Asuka a look that says 'We can use this to help Rei be normal. Then we may have a better chance of having Rei make her own decision when the time comes and thus stopping Third Impact.' Asuka nodded, indicating that she had received the message. "Wonder girl, we can help you find a boyfriend if you want! That will certainly suffice your wish to experience our bond!"

真嗣勉强挤出一个紧张的笑容，“明日香！你知道我是你的...但我觉得我们可以帮帮她...我是说，丽渴望一段恋情？这可是新鲜事！也许我们可以...”真嗣向明日香投去一个眼神，仿佛在说‘我们可以利用这个机会帮助丽变得正常。这样一来，当关键时刻到来时，丽或许能自己做出决定，从而阻止第三次冲击。’明日香点头示意，表示她已经领会了意思。“奇迹少女，如果你想的话，我们可以帮你找个男朋友！这肯定能满足你体验我们羁绊的愿望！”

Rei, on the other hand, had a confused look on her face. "Boy... friend? I already have a boyfriend."

另一方面，丽脸上带着困惑的表情。“男朋友？我已经有男朋友了。”

Shinji and Asuka's jaws dropped. "Wha... who?"

真嗣和明日香的嘴巴张大了。“什...谁？”

"Shinji-Kun is my 'boyfriend,' isn't he?" Rei said innocently.

“真嗣君是我的‘男朋友’，不是吗？”丽天真地说道。

Shinji and Asuka fell silent. Misato laughed harder. "Hahahahahaha! Oh my, my, Shin-chan, never thought you'd interested in an 'Israfel

"真嗣和明日香陷入了沉默。美里笑得更厉害了。“哈哈哈哈哈！哦，我的天，真嗣君，从没想过你会对‘Israfel Special’感兴趣。”

Special', eh? Hahahaha..." Which made Shinji and Asuka blush once they realized what 'Israfel Special' means.

‘特别’，是吗？哈哈哈哈哈.....”这让真嗣和明日香意识到‘Israfel Special’的含义后脸红了起来。

"R-Rei, wha-what are y-you talking about?" Shinji stammered; he could literally feel Asuka's AT-Field pressing harder and harder against his, saying, 'I want an explanation, NOW!'

"R-绫波, 你-你在说什么?" 真嗣结巴着; 他几乎能感觉到明日香的 AT 力场越来越紧地压迫着他的, 仿佛在说, '我现在就要个解释!'

"Shinji-Kun is a boy, and he is my friend. Therefore, he is my boyfriend." Rei said in a plain tone.

"真嗣君是个男孩, 他是我朋友。因此, 他是我的男朋友。" 绫波用平淡的语气说道。

Shinji and Asuka stayed silent for another few seconds, then burst out in laughter. "Hahahaha! Nice one, wonder girl! Hahaha... does this make me your 'girlfriend'? Oh Gott, having a boyfriend and a girlfriend at the same time, Hahahaha..."

真嗣和明日香又沉默了几秒钟, 然后突然爆发出笑声。"哈哈哈哈! 说得好, 奇迹女孩! 哈哈.....这是不是意味着我是你的'女朋友'? 哦天哪, 同时有个男朋友和女朋友, 哈哈哈哈哈....."

"That is correct; I regard Soryu-san as my girlfriend."

"没错, 我把索鲁-san 视为我的女朋友。"

"Rei-chan, boyfriends and girlfriends do not work this way," Misato finally calmed down from laughing, "Having a boyfriend means romantic and sometimes sexual relationship, ya know? Not just a friend that's a boy!"

"丽酱, 男女朋友可不是这样相处的," 美里终于从大笑中平静下来, "有男朋友意味着浪漫甚至有时是性关系, 你知道吗? 不仅仅是男性朋友那么简单!"

Rei seemed to think about this newly acquired information for a while. She said, "what kind of interactions indicate a 'sexual relationship'?"

丽似乎对这些新获得的信息思考了一会儿。她问道: "什么样的互动表明是 '性关系' 呢?"

Misato swallowed, she had never thought Rei would ever ask this kind of question, and she had never given anyone sex ed before. But seeing herself as the only one who had ever had sex, she felt obligated to do the job. "Rei, emmm... a sexual relationship means... Arghhh this is embarrassing... how about this, if anyone has physical contact with your genitals and you are willing to let them, then it can be said as a sexual

relationship."

美里咽了咽口水，她从未想过丽会问这样的问题，也从未给别人上过性教育课。但看到自己是唯一有过性经验的人，她觉得有责任承担这个任务。“丽，嗯.....性关系意味着.....啊，这真尴尬.....这么说吧，如果有人与你的生殖器官有身体接触，而你愿意让他们这么做，那就可以称之为性关系。”

Rei considered this for a few seconds, then said, "Oh... then Soryu- san is not my girlfriend..." Rei paused for another few seconds, while Asuka exhaled and said, "Of course I'm not your girlfriend! And 绫波思考了几秒，然后说道：“哦.....那么惣流小姐不是我的女朋友.....” 绫波又停顿了几秒，而此时明日香呼出一口气，说道：“我当然不是你的女朋友！而且”

Baka-Shinji is not your boyfriend as well!" "But Shinji-kun is still my boyfriend," Rei stated.

笨蛋真嗣也不是你的男朋友！” “但真嗣君仍然是我的男朋友，” 绫波陈述道。

Asuka was dumbfounded. She just couldn't believe what she thought she had heard. Turning around to Shinji, Asuka forced herself to spit out some words, "Shinji Ikari. Explain. Now."

明日香目瞪口呆。她简直不敢相信自己刚才听到的话。转身面对真嗣，明日香强迫自己吐出几个字：“碇真嗣。解释一下。现在。”

Shinji almost had a panic attack; he was so gonna be crushed to mangled meat if he didn't have his AT-Field up against Asuka's. "Wha-what? I-I-I didn't-ne-never-Asuka-" Suddenly he seemed to remember something that may explain the situation. "Asuka... before Over the Rainbow... I dunno..."

真嗣差点儿就恐慌发作了；如果没有 AT 力场挡住明日香的攻击，他肯定会被碾成肉泥。“什-什么？我-我-我并没-没-没有-明日香-” 突然，他似乎想起了什么可能解释当前情况的事情。“明日香.....在《跨越彩虹》之前.....我不清楚.....”

Asuka frowned. 'Before 'Over the Raindow'? It was when I traveled back to this timeline. Oh. So maybe this Shinji had sex with Ayanami before Over the Rainbow already? Then I can't really blame anything on Shinji now...' "Well..."

明日香皱了皱眉。“在《跨越彩虹》之前？那是我回到这个时间线的时候。哦。这么说来，这个真嗣可能在《跨越彩虹》之前就已经和绫波发生了关系？那我现在的真的不能怪真嗣什么了.....” “好吧.....”

Although Shinji and Asuka seemed to calm down a bit, Misato suddenly started feeling nervous. "Rei-chan, what? You... had sex with Shinji?" 尽管真嗣和明日香似乎稍微平静了一些，美里突然感到紧张起来。“绫波，什么？你.....和真嗣发生了关系？”

"I did not have sexual intercourse with Shinji-kun."

"我没有和真嗣君发生性关系。"

The trio sighed in relief. "Then what the hell were you talking about, Wonder girl?"

三人松了一口气。“那你们到底在说什么，奇迹女孩？”

"Shinji-kun came to my apartment to deliver my ID card. He met me in the room when I came out of the bath. He was examining one of my personal items. He fell on top of me and touched my breast. It was... not unpleasant. The situation matches Captain Katsuragi's definition.

Therefore, I conclude Shinji-Kun is my boyfriend."

"真嗣君来我的公寓送还我的身份证。我洗完澡出来时，他在房间里检查我的私人物品。他不小心摔倒在我身上，碰到了我的胸部。那种感觉.....并不讨厌。这种情况符合葛城美里队长的定义。因此，我得出结论，真嗣君是我的男朋友。"

Shinji and Asuka exchanged a look of mutual understanding and relief.

真嗣和明日香交换了一个彼此理解且释然的目光。

'Gosh this is getting nowhere...' Misato sighed, feeling both relieved and frustrated. 'So it seems like I'm going to give Rei-chan a full

'天哪，这事儿毫无进展.....' 美里叹了口气，既感到宽慰又觉得沮丧。'看来我得给丽酱来个全面的'

mother's talk... It's gonna be a long day...'

妈妈式谈话.....今天可有得熬了.....'

Ritsuko Akagi had a long day. Too much had happened recently; one of the most concerning incidents was still the Second Child's recovery. She had a working theory, tho. Today she decided that she had gathered enough data to test her theory; she input her variables and data into the MAGI, and waited for the outcome.

赤木律子度过了漫长的一天。最近发生了太多事情；其中最令人担忧的仍是二号适格者的康复情况。不过，她有一个工作假设。今天，她决定已经收集了足够的数据来测试她的理论；她将变量和数据输入 MAGI，然后等待结果。

Ritsuko's small lab was totally dark; the only light was the faint light emitted from her terminal's screen.

律子的小实验室完全黑暗；唯一的光源是她终端屏幕发出的微弱光芒。

*Processing Data... 处理数据中...*

*Conclusion #1: Asuka L.S. is the next Angel. Probability: 87%.*

结论 #1: 明日香·绫波是下一个使徒。概率: 87 %。

*Conclusion #2: The next Angel will use Asuka L.S. as its medium. Probability: 13%*

结论 #2: 下一个使徒将利用明日香·绫波作为其媒介。概率: 13 %。

*Other Possible Conclusions: 34022 Possible Conclusions. Combined Possibility 0.00000000001%*

其他可能结论: 34022 种可能结论。综合可能性 0.00000000001%。

Ritsuko frowned at the result. Although she didn't want to believe it, she trusted MAGI more than other things. 'Maybe I'm inputting so fewer variables,' She thought. Then she added several conditions.

律子皱眉看着结果。尽管她不愿相信，但她对 MAGI 的信任超过了其他。'或许是我输入的变量太少了，'她想。于是她又添加了几个条件。

*Condition #51: Asuka L.S. has killed or helped kill 4 Angels.*

条件#51: 惣流·明日香·兰格雷已击杀或协助击杀 4 名使徒。

*Condition #52: Asuka L.S. didn't commence attack when deep down Central Dogma.*

条件#52: 惣流·明日香·兰格雷未在深层中央教条区发起攻击。

*Processing Data... 处理数据中...*

*Conclusion #1: Asuka L.S. is the next Angel. Probability: 67%.*

结论 #1: 明日香·绫波是下一个使徒。概率: 67 %。

*Conclusion #2: The next Angel will use Asuka L.S. as its medium. Probability: 33%*

结论 #2: 下一个使徒将利用明日香·绫波作为其媒介。概率: 33 %

*Other Possible Conclusions: 34022 Possible Conclusions. Combined*

其他可能的结论: 34022 种可能的结论。综合

Possibility 0.00000000001%

Ritsuko sighed heavily. She thought there was nothing more she could do to change MAGI's predictions. As hard as to believe it, she couldn't take the risk. She decided to ask MAGI for solutions.

律子重重地叹了口气。她认为已经没有什么办法能改变 MAGI 的预测了。尽管难以置信，但她不能冒这个险。她决定向 MAGI 寻求解决方案。

*Subject: Asuka L.S. 主题：惣流·明日香·兰格雷*

*Suggested Actions: 建议行动：*

*SA #1: Eliminate Subject /Strongly Recommended*

行动建议 #1：消除目标 /强烈推荐

*SA #2: Transfer the subject back to NERV Berlin /Moderately Recommended*

行动建议 #2：将目标转移回 NERV 柏林支部 /中等推荐

*SA #3: Heavy restraint and Surveillance /Not Recommended*

SA #3: 严密束缚与监视 /不推荐

Ritsuko sighed again. She had made her decision.

律子再次叹了口气。她已经做出了决定。

"What the hell is this?" Asuka cried out, seeing a purple-red mix, 80-meters tall, four-limbs Unit D. "What the hell is wrong with the jerk who painted this?"

“这到底是什么鬼东西？”明日香看到一个紫红色的混合体，80 米高，四肢的 D 型单位，惊呼道，“那个混蛋到底是怎么涂成这样的？”

"It's me who decided the color," Misato said with a smirk, "nice look, don't you think?"

"颜色是我决定的，"美里带着一丝得意的笑容说，"看起来不错，你不觉得吗？"

"This is SOOOO UGLY! I'm not going to pilot this thing until it's all red!"

Asuka, although she had grown a bit and her mentality was not as childish as before, she did have a point. The purple-red mix was objectively disturbing. It was not like these two colors repel each other; it was the way they were mixed, the whole design of the color layout, was simply idiotic and unaesthetic.



"这太丑了！我不打算驾驶这东西，除非它全变成红色！" 尽管明日香已经长大了一些，心态也不再像以前那样幼稚，但她的话确实有道理。紫红色的混合在客观上令人不安。这两种颜色并非相互排斥；而是它们混合的方式，整个颜色布局的设计，实在是愚蠢且不美观。

"Ye, Misato-san, this is really not good-looking..." Shinji said, much  
"是啊，美里小姐，这真的不太好看....." 真嗣说，语气中带着些许无奈。

to Asuka's convenience. 对明日香来说很方便。

"Look! Even Baka-Shinji thinks it ugly! You really have no sense of art, Misato!"

"看！就连笨蛋真嗣也觉得它丑！美里，你真的没有艺术感！"

Misato sighed. She had spent two whole days designing the color layout of Unit D, and now it seems like all of her work was in vain. "All right you two, get into your respective entry plug. And that's an ORDER." She said the last sentence forcefully.

美里叹了口气。她花了整整两天时间设计 D 型机的颜色布局，现在看来所有的努力似乎都白费了。“好了，你们两个，进入各自的插入栓。这是命令。”她最后一句说得很有力。

Asuka huffed, she couldn't really do much about it. After both pilots had sat in their seats, Ritsuko's voice filled the channel. "Shinji, look at your left. Asuka, look at your right." They did that and found a small hatch mounted on the respective sides of their plugs. "This is the emergency exit; it allows you to move freely between your entry plugs. It requires two be opened by both sides, since you two sits in physically different entry plugs."

明日香哼了一声，对此她确实无能为力。两位驾驶员坐进各自的驾驶舱后，律子的声音在通讯频道中响起。“真嗣，看你的左边。明日香，看你的右边。”他们照做了，发现各自的插入栓侧面装有一个小舱门。“这是紧急出口；它允许你们在插入栓之间自由移动。需要双方同时打开，因为你们坐在物理上不同的插入栓中。”

"You two will be able to see each other through the wall after activation. Just don't get distracted too much. Also, you've noticed that Unit D has four limbs, right? Each of you will control two of them; Asuka, you will control the upper two limbs. Shinji, you have the bottom. And in case of

only one pilot is available, you'll be only able to use two arms."

“激活后你们将能够通过墙壁看到对方。只是别太分心了。另外，你们注意到 D 型机有四条肢体，对吧？你们每人将控制其中的两条；明日香，你控制上面的两条肢体。真嗣，你控制下面的。如果只有一名驾驶员可用，那么你们只能使用两条手臂。”

"Hai." They said in unison.

“明白。”他们齐声说道。

"Now we'll start the synchronization process. Get ready you two."

“现在我们开始同步过程。你们两个准备好。”

"Insert Entry Plug. Entry Plug inserted. Commence Entry Plug LCL injection. LCL filled. Establishing A10 connections. A-10 connections established and stable. All circuits are operational. Absolute Borderline passed. Stable synchronization established... sync rate holding steady at ninety six percent." Maya reported, a smile appearing on her face.

"Evangelion Unit D activated."

"插入插入栓。插入栓已插入。开始注入 LCL。LCL 已充满。建立 A10 连接。A-10 连接已建立并稳定。所有电路正常运行。绝对领域已通过。同步稳定建立..... 同步率保持在 96%。”玛雅报告道，脸上露出了微笑。“D 型福音战士已激活。”

On the screen, it showed Shinji's sync rate at 75% while Asuka's at 21%. 屏幕上显示，真嗣的同步率为 75%，而明日香的为 21%。

"Shinji, you are doing a great job! Asuka, try focus!" Misato said into the comms. Asuka's sync ratio was too low to operate an Eva Unit at the optimal level.

“真嗣，你做得很好！明日香，试着集中注意力！”美里通过通讯器说道。明日香的同步率太低，无法使 EVA 机体达到最佳操作状态。

"I'm trying!" Asuka yelled, irritated. 'Gah, I know this is not my Unit, but it still stung to know I'm not able to sync with it properly. Maybe I'll ask Shinji's mother to help me. Yui Ikari, are you here?'

“我在努力！”明日香恼怒地喊道，“可恶，我知道这不是我的机体，但知道无法与它正确同步还是让我感到刺痛。也许我该请真嗣的母亲帮忙。碇唯，你在吗？”

*Confusion. Confusion. Rejection.*

困惑。困惑。排斥。

"Asuka's synchro graph is all over the place! Her sync rate dropped to zero-point one percent!" Maya said, "Not good! Shinji's sync rate is dropping as well!"

"明日香的同步图完全乱了！她的同步率降到了零点一百分之一！"美里说，"不好！真嗣的同步率也在下降！"

"What happened in there?" Misato's voice came in the comms.

"里面发生了什么？"美里在通讯中问道。

Inside the entry plug, Asuka felt the LCL around her went cold in an instant. She groaned in frustration, "Argh! Shinji! Do something!"

插入栓内，明日香感觉到周围的 LCL 瞬间变得冰冷。她懊恼地呻吟着，"啊！真嗣！做点什么！"

Shinji knew what was happening; he also felt the rejection from the machine. He also knew that it was because Asuka's reckless attempt to communicate with his mother caused this. 'Mother? Are you here?'

真嗣明白发生了什么；他也感受到了机器的排斥。他知道这是因为明日香鲁莽地试图与他母亲沟通所导致的。'妈妈？您在这里吗？'

*Confusion.*

'Mother, It's okay. Let Asuka pilot. I'll explain everything at the next sync test.'

'妈妈，没关系。让明日香来驾驶吧。下次同步测试时我会解释一切。'

*Confusion. Reluctant Acceptance.*

Both Shinji and Asuka felt a familiar warm sensation around their bodies.

'Thanks, Mother.'

真嗣和明日香都感到身体周围有一种熟悉的温暖感觉。'谢谢您，妈妈。'

"Sync rate stabilizing!... Shinji's sync rate stabled at sixty seven percent! And Asuka at forty one percent!" Maya reported.

"同步率稳定中！.....真嗣的同步率稳定在六十七个百分点！而明日香则是四十一个百分点！"美里报告道。

Misato sighed in relief. "Great work you two! You've got excellent sync rates. Now let's try using your four arms."

美里松了一口气。"干得好，你们俩！同步率非常出色。现在让我们试试用你们的四只手臂。"

Shinji and Asuka were happy to hear that they did well. But they still have to work harder to use the four arms effectively. At first they were just waving the arms pointlessly, trying to establish a sense of familiarity. Then they started to synchronize with each other's moves. After 20 minutes of training, they could pull out some amazingly synchronized movements, like they were dancing.

真嗣和明日香听到自己表现不错感到高兴。但他们还需要更加努力才能有效地使用四只手臂。起初，他们只是毫无目的地挥舞手臂，试图建立一种熟悉感。随后，他们开始与对方的动作同步。经过 20 分钟的训练，他们能够做出一些惊人的同步动作，仿佛在跳舞一般。

The people on the observation deck felt proud of their pilots, even Ritsuko had to admit that they did a good job. "Okay, 10 more minutes and we'll call it today." Suddenly an alarm went off.

观察甲板上的人们为他们的飞行员感到自豪，就连律子也不得不承认他们做得很好。“好的，再过 10 分钟我们就结束今天的任务。”突然，警报响了起来。

Everyone quickly covered their hands over their ears and frantically looked around the room for the source of what was causing the siren to go off.

"Damn it!" Ritsuko slammed her fist onto the desk. "What is it now?!"

每个人迅速用手捂住耳朵，疯狂地在房间里寻找导致警报响起的原因。“该死！”律子一拳砸在桌子上。“现在又是什么情况？！”

"Dr. Akagi!" Maya sounded nearly mortified. "We've detected a heat signature inside Asuka's Entry Plug, and video feeds to the plugs are lost!"

“赤木博士！”玛雅听起来几乎吓坏了。“我们在明日香的插入栓内检测到了热信号，而且插入栓的视频信号丢失了！”

"How?!" She shouted over the alarm.

“怎么回事？！”她对着警报大喊。

"Code Blue!" Makoto exclaimed. "It's an Angel!"

“蓝色警报！”真嗣惊呼，“是使徒！”

Ritsuko's heart skipped a beat. After all, her theory was correct. Asuka was indeed an Angel, and she was clearly waiting for the moment to get into Unit D, just to take it over. Surely this way she could have a much higher chance of getting into Central Dogma. But she had precautions to deal with this type of situation.

律子的心跳漏了一拍。毕竟，她的理论是正确的。明日香确实是一个使徒，而且她显然在等待时机进入 D 型机体，以便接管它。这样她就有更大的机会进入中央教条区。但她已经采取了预防措施来应对这种情况。

Ritsuko pulled out a remote controller, disarmed safety, and pressed the red button.

律子掏出一个遥控器，解除安全装置，按下了红色按钮。

Inside the left Entry Plug, Asuka first saw some purple-ish tissue sticking on the Entry Plug's wall and growing rapidly. 'What the hell is this? Is this the Angel that hacked MAGI? Why is it here? Mein Gott, I gotta get Shinji and me out of here!' Just as she was thinking about  
在左边的插入栓内，明日香首先看到一些紫色的组织粘附在插入栓的墙壁上并迅速生长。'这到底是什么？是那个入侵 MAGI 的使徒吗？它为什么会在这里？我的天，我得带真嗣离开这里！'正当她思考着

how to escape the situation, she suddenly felt the composition of LCL around her changing rapidly, and her feet hurt. "AHHHHHHHHH!" Asuka cried out in pain and looked down at her feet; she was astonished to see her feet disintegrating. 'What the hell is going on?' But there was no time to waste on thinking how to escape without using her Angelic abilities; her reflex took over, and she swiftly disappeared into the darkness.

如何脱身时，她突然感觉到周围的 LCL 成分迅速变化，脚部传来剧痛。"啊啊啊啊啊！"明日香痛苦地喊出声，低头看向自己的脚；她震惊地发现自己的脚正在分解。'这到底是怎么回事？'但已经没有时间去思考如何不使用使徒能力逃脱了；她的本能接管了一切，她迅速消失在黑暗中。

In the right Entry Plug, Shinji's brain stopped working as he heard Asuka screamed and saw her simply disappeared.

在正确的插入栓中，真嗣的大脑停止了运转，因为他听到明日香尖叫，然后她就那样消失了。

On the command deck, Ritsuko was still shivering. She had likely just killed one of the pilots, but she was an Angel, right? However, the alarm didn't stop. "AT-Field detected!" Makoto said, "The pilots  
在指挥甲板上，律子仍在颤抖。她可能刚刚杀死了一名驾驶员，但她是一只使徒，对吧？然而，警报并未停止。"AT 力场被探测到！"真希波说，"驾驶员们可能处于危险之中！"

might be in danger!"  
可能处于危险之中！

"How possible?" Ritsuko shouted, "The Angel should be dead!"  
"怎么可能？" 律子喊道，"使徒应该已经死了！"

Misato just stood there frozen since her brain was still processing all the information. 'An Angel inside Asuka's Entry Plug? What? Will my kids be okay? No no no no no...' Shaking her head, she ordered, "Eject right Entry plug! Report pilots' conditions!"

美里只是呆立在那里，因为她的脑子还在处理所有信息。'使徒在明日香的插入栓里？什么？我的孩子们会没事吗？不不不不不不.....' 她摇摇头，命令道："立即弹出右侧插入栓！报告驾驶员状况！"

"Right Entry Plug Ejected! Shinji's vitals stable, but his heartbeat rate is breaking the roof!" Makoto said, "Asuka..."

"右侧插入栓已弹出！真嗣的生命体征稳定，但他的心率快要爆表了！" 真希波说，"明日香....."

"What! What happened to Asuka!" Misato cried, "Tell me she's okay!"

"什么！明日香怎么了！" 美里喊道，"告诉我她没事！"

"There's nothing, ma'am," Aoba said, "We can't detect any sign of her. She's... gone."

"没有任何迹象，女士，" 青叶说，"我们检测不到她的任何信号。她.....消失了。"

"What do you mean by 'gone'?" Misato "She's not gone! She must be there!"

"你说的'消失'是什么意思？" 美里问，"她没有消失！她一定还在那里！"

"V-video feed reconnected," Maya said, her hands shivering, "I-I  
"视频信号重新连接上了，" 玛雅说道，双手颤抖着，"我，我....."

can't see anything..." 什么也看不见.....

On the screen, the video feed showing an empty entry plug, with some purple-ish tissues on the wall, glowing. "Someone tell me where she is!" Misato yelled, completely ignoring the ongoing Angel alarm.

屏幕上，显示着空无一人的插入栓，墙上有些紫色的组织在发光。"谁来告诉我她在哪儿！" 美里喊道，完全无视了正在进行的使徒警报。

Ritsuko realized her mistake; after all, Asuka wasn't the Angel. She had just killed one of the pilots and gained nothing.

律子意识到自己的错误；毕竟，明日香不是使徒。她刚刚杀死了一名驾驶员，却一无所获。

"I injected some strong dissociative solutions into the plug," Ritsuko said, "It should have killed the Angel..."

“我在插入栓里注射了一些强效的分离剂，”律子说道，“本该杀死使徒的.....”

Misato's heart nearly stopped beating once she heard the words. She froze for several seconds and suddenly leaped towards Ritsuko and pinned her on the wall hard. "What did you do? You son of a bitch!" Misato shouted into Ritsuko's face, "What did you do to Asuka?! Give her back!"

美里听到这些话时，心脏几乎停止了跳动。她僵住了几秒钟，突然向律子扑去，将她狠狠地按在墙上。“你做了什么？你这个混蛋！”美里对着律子的脸大喊，“你对明日香做了什么？！把她还给我！”

"I was trying to eliminate the Angel," Ritsuko said, "Pilots' lives are acceptable losses."

“我试图消灭使徒，”律子说，“驾驶员的生命是可以接受的损失。”

SLAP

Misato slapped Ritsuko's face so hard that the scientist tumbled to the floor.

美里狠狠地扇了律子一巴掌，打得这位科学家摔倒在地。

Asuka had been staying inside the sea of Dirac for an hour. Thanks to her S2 organ, her injuries from the dissolvent had regenerated completely. 'I didn't want to do this, but there were no other options. I would have been dead.' Sighing heavily, she curled herself into a ball. 'I wonder what Shinji is doing. Maybe I can simply teleport into his entry plug and tell him that I'm okay. Gotta make sure that his plug is ejected at first, tho. I don't want to be caught appearing from thin air.' Having decided, she carefully manipulated the exit of her Sea of Dirac, and located Shinji's entry plug. She found it floating in the Geofront's lake. 'Perfect. Maybe I can stay there with him for a while.' Asuka set the exit of the Dirac sea and walked out, just to find a Shinji crying hard inside his entry plug. He saw Asuka

disappear,

明日香已经在狄拉克之海里待了一个小时。多亏了她的 S2 机关，溶剂造成的伤势已经完全再生。‘我本不想这么做，但别无选择。我可能会死。’她重重地叹了口气，蜷缩成一团。‘不知道真嗣在做什么。也许我可以直接传送到他的插入栓里告诉他我没事。不过得先确保他的插入栓被弹出，我不想凭空出现被发现。’决定好后，她小心翼翼地操控着狄拉克之海的出口，定位到了真嗣的插入栓。她发现它漂浮在第三新东京市的湖中。‘完美。也许我可以和他待一会儿。’明日香设定好出口并走了出去，却看到真嗣在插入栓里痛哭。他看到了明日香消失，

after all. "Asuka... Asuka... no... I'm sorry..." She smiled faintly. "Hey, Baka-Shinji. What are you doing?"

毕竟。“明日香...明日香...不...对不起...”她微微一笑。“嘿，笨蛋真嗣。你在干什么？”

Shinji nearly jumped out of his seat. 'What was that voice? It was her voice, but...' He quickly jerked his around, just to stare directly into Asuka's pure blue pupils.

真嗣差点从座位上跳起来。‘那是什么声音？是她的声音，但是...’他迅速转过头，直接对上了明日香清澈的蓝色眼眸。

"Wha... Asu... ka?" Shinji stammered, not believing what he saw, "Am I... d-dreaming? Is th-this real?"

“什...明日...香？”真嗣结结巴巴地说，不敢相信自己的眼睛，“我...我是在做梦吗？这...这是真的吗？”

Asuka lightly flicked his forehead, "Of course I'm real! I have Angelic powers, after all."

明日香轻轻弹了一下他的额头，“我当然是真实的！毕竟我有天使般的力量。”

Shinji shot up from his seat and embraced Asuka in a tight hug. "Thank God... Asuka... I thought..."

真嗣从座位上猛地站起来，紧紧抱住明日香。“感谢上帝.....明日香.....我以为.....”

Asuka returned the hug just as fiercely and said, "Baka, you should really stop worrying so much. I can take care of myself, especially with my powers!" She pulled Shinji into a quick kiss, "But... I can't stay here for long. They must think me dead or something."



明日香同样用力地回抱他，说道：“笨蛋，你真的应该少担心些。我能照顾好自己，尤其是有我的力量！”她迅速吻了一下真嗣，“但是.....我不能在这里久留。他们一定以为我死了什么的。”

Shinji sighed, "Yeah... what are you going to do, then?"

真嗣叹了口气，“是啊.....那你打算怎么办？”

"I don't know... we can't hide our identity forever, that's for sure. I think I'll just hide somewhere for now... I don't need food or water to survive, after all." Asuka sighed, "That also means... I can't be with you all day from now on. Maybe... during some nights, I can sneak in, and we'll talk, and maybe sleep together, sounds good?"

“我不知道.....我们总不能永远隐藏身份，这是肯定的。我想我现在就先躲起来吧.....毕竟我不需要食物和水来生存。”明日香叹了口气，“这也意味着.....从今往后我不能整天和你在一起了。或许.....在一些夜晚，我可以偷偷溜进来，我们聊聊，也许还能一起睡，听起来不错吧？”

"Yeah, that maybe the only thing we can do for now..." Shinji said, a dejected look on his face. He thought this time he could finally spend more time with Asuka, but it seemed this time things were more fucked up, at least for now. "Maybe I should tell Misato about us soon..."

“嗯，这或许是我们目前唯一能做的.....”真嗣说，脸上带着沮丧的表情。他本以为这次终于能和明日香多相处些时间，但似乎这次事情更加糟糕，至少目前是这样。“也许我应该尽快告诉美里关于我们的事.....”

Both of them fell silent for a minute. Suddenly Asuka rolled over and rode on top of Shinji and said, "I remember last time they spent 10

“两人沉默了一会儿。突然，明日香翻身骑在真嗣身上，说道：“我记得上次他们花了 10 分钟才找到我们。”

hours to retrieve us. I wonder what we can do during this time?" She said with a passionate look in her eyes.

“不知道这段时间我们能做些什么？”她眼中闪烁着热情的光芒说道。

Shinji looked directly into Asuka's bright eyes, "Asuka... we don't... um..."

真嗣直视着明日香明亮的眼睛，“明日香.....我们不.....呃.....”

Asuka put her index finger on Shinji's lips, shutting him up. "Shhhh... I think this may be our only chance in foreseeable future... dun wanna waste it..." She said, pressing a button on her plug suit, the suit deflated.

明日香将食指放在真嗣的唇上，让他安静下来。“嘘.....我觉得这可能是我们未来一段时间内唯一的机会.....不想浪费它.....”她说，按下了她驾驶服上的一个按钮，驾驶服随即瘪了下去。

"Asuka... but... protection..."

“明日香.....但是.....防护措施.....”

"LCL acts as contraceptive implant... it's okay..." Asuka gently put her lips on Shinji's, her hand stroking his hair.

“LCL 有避孕效果.....没关系的.....”明日香温柔地吻上了真嗣的唇，手轻抚着他的头发。

Unable to come up with more arguments against this, Shinji finally gave in and got off his plug suit.

无法再提出更多反对意见，真嗣最终还是妥协了，脱下了他的插入栓服。

"... and ENTER!" With a forceful keystroke, Ritsuko uploaded her code into the MAGI. A few seconds later, the screen flicked from red to blue; on the right it said "Self-Destruction Rejected".

“.....然后按下回车！”随着有力的敲击，律子将她的代码上传到了 MAGI 系统中。几秒钟后，屏幕从红色跳转为蓝色；右侧显示着“自毁程序已拒绝”。

"The Angel has gone silent," Makoto reported. "We did it..."

“使徒已经沉默，”真希报告道，“我们成功了.....”

With a big relieved sigh, Ritsuko got up from the floor. This place was dark and messy; dirty pipes tangled with each other like a human's brain. Sticky notes all around the wall; they had just saved humanity from distinction.

However, Ritsuko knew that this was not the end of the day.

带着一声释然的叹息，律子从地板上站起身。这个地方昏暗而杂乱；肮脏的管道相互缠绕，宛如人脑的结构。墙上贴满了便签；他们刚刚拯救了人类免于灭绝。然而，律子知道，这一天并未结束。

She exited the chamber, seeing a red-eyed Misato Katsuragi giving her a death glare. Misato thought she had lost Asuka again, and it was because of Ritsuko's arrogance.

她走出房间，看到双眼通红的美里正用死亡凝视盯着她。美里以为她再次失去了明日香，而这都是因为律子的傲慢。

"Misato, you need to..." Ritsuko was totally expecting a gunshot through her head.

"美里，你需要....." 律子完全预料到自己会被一枪爆头。

"Call me Major Katsuragi." Misato was trying hard to not lash out immediately and strangle the blonde bitch in front of her, but her composure was failing.

"叫我葛城美里少校。" 美里努力克制着不立刻发作，掐死眼前这个金发婊子，但她的镇定正逐渐瓦解。

"Fine, Major. Before you kill me, I want to tell you something you should know." Ritsuko sighed. Before Misato was simply a captain. But now, as a Major, she was cleared for a higher level of classified information. However, the deepest secrets must still be kept from her. "Remember our conversation back then when we first recovered Asuka?"

"好吧，少校。在你杀我之前，我想告诉你一些你应该知道的事。" 律子叹了口气。在美里还只是上尉时，她就已经是少校了。但现在，作为少校，她有权接触更高级别的机密信息。然而，最深层的秘密仍需对她保密。"记得我们第一次救回明日香时的那次谈话吗？"

Misato tried to search in her memories. She couldn't come up with any complete sentences, only blurry images. "No. And I don't know how it has anything to do with stopping me from breaking your neck." Her tone was cold and piercing, full of disgust and hatred. She had never thought her old friend back in University was such a cold and indifferent person. Not to mention what she had done with poor Rei

美里试图在记忆中搜寻。她想不起任何完整的句子，只有模糊的影像。"不记得了。而且我也不知道这跟阻止我扭断你的脖子有什么关系。" 她的语气冰冷而尖锐，充满了厌恶和仇恨。她从未想过大学时代的老朋友会是这样一个冷漠无情的人。更别提她对可怜的绫波所做的事了

Ayanami.

"I'll put it straight; the other theory I was talking about was Asuka

"我直说吧；我之前提到的另一个理论是关于明日香

was an Angel." 是使徒。

Misato suddenly remembered their conversation.

美里突然想起了他们的对话。

*"Theoretically yes, but there are a lot of details unanswered. Since only EVAs and Angels could produce an AT-Field, and Unit 02 was certainly not the one which did it..."*

*"理论上是的，但还有很多细节未解。既然只有 EVA 和使徒能产生 AT 力场，而二号机显然不是那个产生者....."*

*"So... an Angel from another universe saved her? That sounds... disturbing. Why would an Angel ever do that? And what about the time? How could she still be alive, seven days without oxygen, food, or water? To be honest, now I'm gonna believe it if you just tell me Asuka herself is an Angel."*

*"所以.....来自另一个宇宙的使徒救了她？这听起来.....令人不安。使徒为什么会这么做？还有时间问题？她怎么可能在七天没有氧气、食物或水的情况下还活着？说实话，现在如果你告诉我明日香本身就是使徒，我也会相信。"*

Seeing the expression on Misato's face softened, Ritsuko continued, "Major, I ran an analysis on the MAGI. It told me there was a sixty- seven percent of chance that Asuka was an Angel. The MAGI

"看到美里脸上的表情缓和下来，律子继续说道：“少校，我对 MAGI 进行了分析。它告诉我明日香是使徒的可能性有六十七个百分点。MAGI"

recommended me to eliminate the subject immediately. Instead I 建议我立即消除目标。但我没有这么做，

only mounted some precautions; when the Angel alarm went off, and especially the heat signature was from Asuka's plug, I simply reacted." 只是采取了些预防措施；当使徒警报响起，尤其是热信号来自明日香驾驶舱时，我本能地做出了反应。

Misato was processing this information at full speed. After a minute of silence, she finally spoke, "Rits... what you did, said, were horrible. I can never forgive you; Shinji would never forgive you." She decided to leave Ritsuko alive for now; after all, she needed more answers.

美里正在飞速处理这些信息。沉默了一分钟后，她终于开口道，“律子.....你所做所说，都太可怕了。我永远无法原谅你；真嗣也永远不会原谅你。”她决定暂时留律子一命；毕竟，她还需要更多的答案。

Misato's phone suddenly rang. She picked up her phone and accepted the incoming call from the entry plug retrieval team. "Major Katsuragi."

美里手机突然响起。她拿起手机，接听了来自插入栓回收小组的来电。“葛城少校。”

"The entry plug is recovered; pilot Ikari is conscious. No obvious physical injuries." The team reported.

“插入栓已回收；碇驾驶员意识清醒。无明显外伤。”小组报告道。

"Roger. Get him to the debriefing room immediately." Misato exhaled. She didn't know how she would break the news to Shinji; she was sure the poor kid couldn't take it anymore.

“收到。立即带他到简报室。”美里呼出一口气。她不知道该如何向真嗣传达这个消息；她确信这可怜的孩子已经承受不住了。

Rei Ayanami stood in the hallway leading to the debriefing room. The hallway was dark and depressing. Whenever the room is needed, it indicates more people must have been hurt. She... hated the room for that reason. Another new emotion for her, hatred.

绫波零站在通往简报室的走廊上。走廊昏暗而压抑。每当需要使用这个房间，就意味着又有更多人受伤了。她.....因为这个原因讨厌这个房间。对她来说，这是另一种新情感，憎恨。

She had just been told the situation regarding the Second Child. She had seen the empty entry plug as well. But something was not right; 2 minutes ago, when she had met Shinji in the hallway, she made several interesting observations.

她刚刚被告知了关于第二适任者的情况。她也看到了空无一人的插入栓。但有些不对劲；两分钟前，当她在走廊遇到真嗣时，她注意到了几个有趣的细节。

'Observation: Shinji-Kun had been staying inside his entry plug for the past 9 hours. Shinji-kun carried a content expression when walking down the hallway. And... Shinji-kun smelled like LCL and... Soryu-san. How curious. Known Conditions: Staying inside the Entry Plug alone for 9 hours should be an excruciating experience. Soryu- san was disintegrated into LCL. Or did she?' Rei thought about her

'观察：真嗣君在过去 9 小时里一直待在他的插入栓内。真嗣君走在走廊上时带着满足的表情。而且.....真嗣君闻起来有 LCL 和.....惣流小姐的味道。真奇怪。已知情况：独自在插入栓内待 9 小时应该是极其痛苦的体验。惣流小姐被分解成了 LCL。还是说她没有？' 绫波思考着这些。

last known condition for a while. And continued her train of thought. 'Conclusion: Shinji-Kun had done something physically intimate with Soryu-san. But Soryu-san should be... gone. My observation conflicts with known conditions. Something must be wrong.' Her thoughts were interrupted by a scream coming from the debriefing room. 最近已知的情况持续了一段时间。她继续着自己的思绪。'结论：真嗣君与惣流同学有过身体上的亲密接触。但惣流同学应该已经.....不在了。我的观察与已知情况相冲突。一定是哪里出了问题。'她的思绪被简报室传来的尖叫声打断。

*2 minutes earlier*

Shinji walked down the corridor towards the debriefing room. He had so much in his mind; how should he react to the news that's supposed to be Asuka's death? When should he tell the truth to Misato? He wanted to spend more time with Asuka, but he also knew the potential risk of doing this. Just as he was about to enter the debriefing room, he saw Ayanami standing outside, watching him curiously. He immediately turned to a dejected expression, and walked into the debriefing room.

真嗣沿着走廊走向简报室。他心中有太多事情；该如何面对本应是明日香死亡的消息？何时该向美里坦白真相？他希望能与明日香共度更多时光，但也深知这样做的潜在风险。就在他即将进入简报室时，他看到绫波站在门外，好奇地注视着他。他立刻换上一副沮丧的表情，走进了简报室。

In the room, Misato sat in the front with Ritsuko standing beside her; a couple technicians and the bridge bunnies sat across the computers. Fuyutsuki was standing at the back of the room. The room was dark and quiet; there was only the wizzling sound of the projector. Everyone had a sad look on their faces, except Dr. Akagi.

房间里，美里坐在前面，律子站在她旁边；几名技术人员和桥上的工作人员坐在电脑前。冬月站在房间后面。房间昏暗而寂静；只有投影仪发出的嘶嘶声。每个人的脸上都带着悲伤的表情，除了赤木博士。

Shinji sat down in his seat and waited. Misato took a deep breath, "Shinji... what we are going to tell you... just please, stay with us, okay?"

真嗣坐在座位上等待着。美里深吸了一口气，“真嗣...我们要告诉你的事情...请你一定要和我们在一起，好吗？”

Shinji let out a big sigh, "It's about Asuka, right? I haven't seen her since... I got ejected." Shinji turned around to look at Misato, who couldn't look

straight into his eyes. "I... just tell me she's alive..." Shinji was trying hard to compose himself to keep a sad and dejected mood. He didn't want to do this anymore, he wanted to tell them everything so that he could spend more time with Asuka, but he also knew he couldn't.

"真嗣长叹一声，"是关于明日香的，对吧？自从...我被弹射出去后就没见过她。"真嗣转过身来看着美里，她不敢直视他的眼睛。"我...只要告诉我她还活着..."真嗣努力控制自己，保持一种悲伤和沮丧的情绪。他不想再这样下去了，他想把一切都告诉他们，这样他就能多花些时间和明日香在一起，但他也知道他不能。"

Misato sighed heavily. "Shinji... I... we lost her." Shinji's body twitched hearing these words. Misato continued, "There was a" "美里沉重地叹了口气。"真嗣...我...我们失去了她。"听到这些话，真嗣的身体微微颤抖。美里继续说道，"当时发生了..."

parasitic Angel inside her entry plug, and..."  
寄生在她驾驶舱内的使徒，以及.....

Shinji got all information he needed at that time. He understood that precautions were made to eliminate the Angel. Those people must have thought they killed Asuka in the process. At least that's what he thought. "An Angel... so our pilots are expandable, right?" Shinji interrupted Misato and shot a death glare towards Ritsuko, "we are all just tools..." He said this not only to himself. He smiled internally as he saw Ritsuko's eyes twitched at his words. "I want to go home." Shinji stood up and left for changing room.

碇真嗣在那刻获取了他所需的所有信息。他明白为了消灭使徒，已经采取了预防措施。那些人一定以为他们在过程中杀死了明日香。至少他是这么认为的。"一个使徒.....所以我们的驾驶员是可以牺牲的，对吧？"真嗣打断了美里，向律子投去一个死亡凝视，"我们不过是工具....."他不仅是对自己说。他内心微笑着，看到律子在他的话语下眼角抽搐。"我想回家。"真嗣站起身，前往更衣室。

"He took that much better than I thought..." Misato said and left the room as well.

"他比我想象的要好得多....."美里说道，也离开了房间。

Shinji was lying on his bed listening to his SDAT when Misato knocked on his bedroom door. "Come in," He said.

真嗣正躺在床上听着他的 SDAT，这时美里敲了敲他的卧室门。“进来吧，”他说。

Misato was surprised to even hear a response; she still remembered how Shinji behaved last time he thought Asuka has died. She slid the door open and leaned on the frame. "Shinji... are you okay?"

美里甚至对听到回应感到惊讶；她还记得上次真嗣以为明日香去世时的行为。她推开门，靠在门框上。“真嗣.....你还好吗？”

"Kinda..." Shinji had no idea of how to reply; he was never good at lying or acting.

“有点.....”真嗣不知道该怎么回答；他从来都不擅长撒谎或演戏。

Misato was taken aback by his attitude. Shinji did not look like he just lost his love. She thought maybe Shinji had totally lost his mind. "Listen Shinji... I know that... it's hard to take in... especially the second time. But..."

美里被他的态度吓了一跳。真嗣看起来并不像刚刚失去了爱人。她想，也许真嗣已经完全失去了理智。“听着，真嗣.....我知道.....这很难接受.....尤其是第二次。但是.....”

Shinji cut her off, "I know, Misato-san. But I also know that She's okay. I just know it."

真嗣打断了她，“我知道，美里小姐。但我也知道她没事。我就是知道。”

Misato blinked. There was no desperation or self-assurance in his voice, but confidence. She sighed again, "I believe you, Shinji-kun. I believe she'll come back."

美里眨了眨眼。他的声音里没有绝望也没有自信，而是充满了信心。她再次叹息，“我相信你，真嗣君。我相信她会回来的。”

Shinji smiled, "Thanks, Misato-san."

真嗣微笑着说：“谢谢你，美里小姐。”

Hours passed. Shinji tossed and turned in his bed; he was still nervous about Asuka's conditions. He was worried about where she'll be staying during the time. Of course, he didn't worry about her safety; she could certainly take care of herself with her powers. Just as he was about to drift into sleep, he was patted lightly on the shoulder.

时间流逝。真嗣在床上辗转反侧；他仍然对明日香的情况感到紧张。他担心她在



这段时间会住在哪里。当然，他并不担心她的安全；凭借她的能力，她肯定能照顾好自己。正当他即将入睡时，有人轻轻拍了拍他的肩膀。

"Hey, Baka-Shinji. Are you awake?" Came a familiar voice.

Shinji shot open his eyes and jerked his head towards the voice. He smiled widely as he saw Asuka, still in her plug suit, looking at him with a beautiful smile. "Hey, Asuka. Er... where would you stay? I mean, won't you feel lonely?"

真嗣猛地睁开眼睛，扭头看向声音的方向。他看到明日香仍然穿着插入栓服，带着美丽的微笑看着他，他露出了灿烂的笑容。“嘿，明日香。呃.....你会住在哪里？我是说，你不会感到孤单吗？”

Asuka chuckled, "Baka. I can take care of myself. I'm just staying in the Sea of Dirac for now. Maybe I'll go to the top of the Himalayas and look at the stars if I grow bored."

明日香轻笑一声，“笨蛋。我自己能照顾好自己。我现在只是暂时待在狄拉克海里。如果我感到无聊，也许会去喜马拉雅山顶看看星星。”

"Sea of Dirac... is that Leliel's thing? how'd u use it?"

“狄拉克海.....那是雷里尔的能力吗？你是怎么利用它的？”

"We traveled here through it. Aayan... Lilith used it to send us here.

" "我们是通过它来到这里的。阿亚.....莉莉丝利用它把我们送到了这里。"

We simply inherited it. Isn't it so cool?!" Asuka giggled.

"我们只是继承了它。是不是很酷？" 明日香咯咯笑道。

"So... I can use this power as well? Cool... maybe I'll try it

那么...我也可以使用这种力量吗？酷...也许我该试试

sometime..."

Asuka quickly planted a kiss on Shinji's lips and stood up, "Gotta go now. Guten Nacht, Liebling. I love you."

明日香迅速在真嗣的唇上印下一吻，站起身来，“现在得走了。晚安，亲爱的。我爱你。”

"I love you too, Asuka. Good night."

"我也爱你，明日香。晚安。"

AN: Aw. poor Asuka has been through so much. Next chapter will take another half week I suppose. I know Shinji and Asuka are a bit of OOC sometimes, but remember their mentality was not the same

作者注：哎，可怜的明日香经历了这么多。下一章大概还要再等半个星期吧。我知道有时真嗣和明日香有点脱离角色，但请记住他们的思维方式与电视剧中不同；他们已经相爱几个月了。

as in the TV series; they've been in love for months.

不像在电视剧中那样；他们已经相爱数月了。

---

## Chapter 10: Lies and Silence

AN: Poor Asuka can't catch a break, can she? In this chapter, Shinji's intense confrontation with Ayanami about their identities. A relatively long chapter since I put two episodes into one. I left out some unnecessary scenes since they don't bother with my plot and I'm sure my readers are all brilliant Eva fans who know what happens in these episodes. :/

AN: 可怜的明日香真是倒霉透顶，不是吗？本章中，真嗣与绫波关于他们身份的激烈对峙。由于我将两集内容合并为一章，所以篇幅相对较长。我省略了一些无关紧要的场景，因为它们与我的剧情无关，而且我相信我的读者都是聪明绝顶的EVA 粉丝，对这些集数的内容了如指掌。：/

I do not own Evangelion. Chapter 10: Lies and Silence

我不拥有《新世纪福音战士》。第 10 章：谎言与沉默

Misato just came back from NERV. She had been working non-stop; the paperwork from the UN and public relations has always been a pain in the butt. 'Asuka's gone again,' she thought, 'I wonder where does the confidence of Shinji comes from. Poor kid probably lost his mind.' Sighing, she pulled out her keycard and sliced it through the lock, the door hissed open.

美里刚从 NERV 回来。她一直不停地工作；来自联合国和公共关系的文书工作总是让人头疼。'明日香又不见了，'她想，'真不知道真嗣的自信从何而来。可怜的孩子可能已经精神崩溃了。'叹了口气，她拿出她的钥匙卡，刷过锁孔，门嘶嘶地打开了。

"Tadaima." She entered the apartment, walking straight to 'Shinji's lovely suite'. She wanted to get Shinji some fresh air, since she has been staying in NERV headquarters for 3 days and she thought Shinji must have been rotting in his bed, just like the last time. She was surprised to find the apartment clean and tidy; apparently, Shinji had been taking care of the chores. She then found some food in the microwave and ate; she also noticed a note on the dining table.

“我回来了。”她走进公寓，径直走向‘真嗣的可爱小屋’。她想带真嗣出去透透气，因为他已经在 NERV 总部待了三天，她认为真嗣一定像上次一样在床上发霉了。她惊讶地发现公寓干净整洁；显然，真嗣一直在做家务。然后她在微波炉里找到了一些食物吃了起来；她还注意到餐桌上有一张便条。

*Dear Misato-san, 亲爱的美里小姐,*

*I'm going out for a walk. Coming back late, don't wait for me for dinner. I'll be safe, don't worry.*

我出去散步了。会晚些回来，不用等我吃晚饭。我会平安的，别担心。

*Love, Shinji 爱你的，真嗣*

Misato didn't know how to react to this. For one, she felt happy that Shinji was not just rotting in his bed and swallowing into self-pity; for 美里不知道该如何应对这种情况。一方面，她感到高兴，因为真嗣没有只是躺在床上自怨自艾；另一方面，尽管有纸条告诉她不必担心，她还是担心他的安全。她认为最好的办法是联系第二支部，确保他们密切关注真嗣。她最不希望的就是再失去一位驾驶员，还有她的……儿子？

another, she was worried about his safety, despite the note telling her otherwise. She thought the best thing she could do was to contact Section 2 and make sure they keep an eye on Shinji. The last thing she wanted was to lose another pilot and her... son?

美里掏出手机。“第二支部特工四郎。”

Misato pulled out her phone. "Section 2 agent Shiro."

美里掏出手机。“第二支部特工四郎。”

"Major Katsuragi. I want a report on Pilot Ikari's current location."

葛城美里少校，我要一份关于碇真嗣驾驶员当前位置的报告。

"Major, we haven't seen him since he entered your apartment last night. We suppose he's still in your apartment."

少校，自从他昨晚进入您的公寓后，我们就没再见到他。我们推测他还在您的公寓里。

Misato blinked. She quickly knocked on Shinji's bedroom door again, no replies coming out. "Shinji, I'm coming in!" She slid the door open and saw an empty room. The blanket on the bed was folded neatly, his SDAT laying on the table.

美里眨了眨眼。她迅速再次敲响了真嗣的卧室门，没有回应。“真嗣，我要进来了！”她拉开房门，看到的是一间空荡荡的房间。床上的被子叠得整整齐齐，他的 SDAT 放在桌上。

Misato felt a chill ran down her spine. Section 2 said Shinji hasn't come out of the apartment, but there was no sign of him anywhere here. Where could he be? She swiftly exited the apartment and got in her RA A310, and started the engine. With a loud roar, the blue A310 rushed out the parking lot and sped down the road. She's gonna find her Shinji.

美里感到一阵寒意沿着脊背而下。第二课报告说真嗣没有离开公寓，但这里却不见他的踪影。他会在哪里呢？她迅速离开公寓，坐进她的 RA A310，启动引擎。随着一声轰鸣，蓝色的 A310 冲出停车场，疾驰在道路上。她一定要找到她的真嗣。

"Well, this place is kinda subpar compared to Mount Everest, but I guess it'll do!" Asuka exclaimed joyfully, her arms stretching high into the sky. She was wearing her favorite yellow sundress that she had 'stolen' from her wardrobe and a violet choker. Her ever-present red A-10 clips were missing, and her golden-red hair poured down her head like a waterfall. This new look of her was just heartbreaking.

“好吧，这个地方比起珠穆朗玛峰是差了点，但我想也凑合吧！”明日香欢快地喊道，双臂高高伸向天空。她穿着她最喜欢的黄色太阳裙，这件裙子是她从衣橱里‘偷’来的，还戴着一个紫色的项圈。她那标志性的红色 A-10 发夹不见了，金红色的头发如瀑布般倾泻而下。她这全新的造型真是令人心碎。

Thanks to her S2 organ, the energy generated from it had been keeping her body temperature stable. The night sky was beautiful when seen from the top of Mount Alps; there was no light pollution or air pollution to block out the stars; they looked truly amazing. "Shinji, what time is it

now?" Asuka turned her head toward a certain brown-haired boy standing beside her who was smiling contently.

多亏了她的 S2 器官，它产生的能量一直维持着她的体温稳定。从阿尔卑斯山顶俯瞰夜空，美丽无比；没有光污染或空气污染遮挡星星，它们看起来真是美极了。“真嗣，现在几点了？”明日香转头看向站在她身边、正满意微笑着的棕发男孩。

"Errr, Japan local time twelve-thirty P.M.," Shinji said, "here we're at four-thirty A.M. The sun is about to come out."

“呃，日本当地时间下午十二点半，”真嗣说道，“这里我们是凌晨四点半。太阳就要升起来了。”

"Wunderbar," Asuka said; it was her idea to come to the top of the Alps to watch the sunrise. The time difference here was perfect; Shinji could go back to the apartment in Japan's afternoon. "Ahem, what do you think about the sky, Baka?"

“太棒了，”明日香说；来阿尔卑斯山顶看日出是她的主意。这里的时间差正合适；真嗣可以在日本的下午回到公寓。“咳，你觉得天空怎么样，笨蛋？”

Shinji stood for a few seconds, trying to come up with a comment that's pleasant for Asuka to hear. "Hmmm, the stars... they remind of me of your blue eyes. They're just, errr, so beautiful."

真嗣站了几秒钟，试图想出一个能让明日香高兴的评论。“嗯，星星.....它们让我想起了你的蓝眼睛。它们就是，呃，那么美丽。”

Asuka blushed a little hearing those words. "It's a good thing for you to appreciate my beauty, Baka. You're stuck with me for good!" She planted a quick kiss on Shinji's right cheek, who also blushed a shade of red. "But... we can't stay like this forever. And I'm not going to leave you and wonder girl to fight Angels without me, the most skilled and brilliant pilot!"

听到这些话，明日香微微脸红。“你能欣赏我的美貌是件好事，笨蛋。你可是永远都离不开我了！”她在真嗣的右脸颊上迅速吻了一下，真嗣的脸也泛起了红晕。“但是.....我们不能一直这样下去。我可不会让你和那个奇怪的女孩独自去对抗使徒，我可是最熟练、最出色的驾驶员！”

Shinji chuckled; one thing he had always loved about Asuka was her pride and confidence, of course when appropriately displayed. "I know, Asuka. I'll break the truth to Misato as soon as possible, but I need to make sure she could take it in it first."

真嗣轻声笑了；他一直喜欢明日香的一点就是她的骄傲和自信，当然是在适当展现的时候。“我知道，明日香。我会尽快向美里坦白真相，但首先我得确保她能接受这个事实。”

Asuka huffed, "Hmph, that drunk would believe everything after two cans of beer! Just make sure she doesn't have her pistol handy when I come out, I don't want to get shot in the head if she thinks I'm an Angel!"

明日香哼了一声，“哼，那个醉鬼两罐啤酒下肚就会相信一切！只要确保我出来时她没拿着枪就行，我可不想在她以为我是使徒时被爆头！”

"Sure thing, Asuka," Shinji said. He had a good idea of Misato's extreme hatred towards the Angels; one of them took out her father's life, after all. "Look, the sun is coming out!"

“当然，明日香，”真嗣说道。他很清楚美里对使徒的极端憎恨；毕竟，其中一个使徒夺走了她父亲的生命。“看，太阳出来了！”

A faint white-yellowish light appeared from the eastern horizon; minutes later, the upper part of the sun could be seen. The sun rose slowly but steadily, the light quickly covered all the stars. Asuka and Shinji sat down, their fingers intertwined, watching one of the most  
一抹淡淡的黄白色光芒从东方地平线出现；几分钟后，太阳的上半部分便映入眼帘。太阳缓缓而坚定地升起，光芒很快覆盖了所有的星星。明日香和真嗣坐了下来，手指交缠，目睹了他们一生中见过的最

beautiful scenes they'd ever seen in their entire lives. "Shinji... I want us to be like this forever... I feel so happy..."

美丽的景象。“真嗣.....我希望我们能永远这样.....我感到如此幸福.....”

Shinji smiled, "I want to be with you forever as well, Asuka. Nothing can stop us."

真嗣微笑着说：“我也想永远和你在一起，明日香。没有什么能阻止我们。”

Asuka rested her head on Shinji's shoulder, a content sigh came out of her mouth. They stayed like this for like an eternity.

明日香将头靠在真嗣的肩膀上，满足的叹息从她口中传出。他们就这样静静地待了仿佛永恒的时间。

"The next Angel is Leliel..." Shinji suddenly said, "I guess I'll just wait for my mother to help me." Shinji sighed; he didn't want to rely everything on her mother. And last time Asuka was there to delay the N2 strike that

would have killed Shinji, this time without her, no one knows what might happen.

“下一个使徒是雷里尔...”真嗣突然说道，“我想我还是等妈妈来帮我吧。”真嗣叹了口气；他不想完全依赖母亲。而上次有明日香在，她拖延了本可能杀死真嗣的 N2 攻击，这次没有她，谁也不知道会发生什么。

"Just be careful, Baka." Asuka pouted, "If you don't come back... I'll... I'll come to you wherever you are, and I'll make you hope you were dead!"

"小心点，笨蛋。" 明日香噘着嘴说，"如果你不回来.....我会.....我会找到你，无论你在哪里，我会让你希望自己已经死了！"

Shinji chuckled hearing the threat. The sun had come out completely, the sunshine poured down from the sky covering both demi-gods. "Okay, it's time for you to go! They don't want to make the drunk worried, do you?" Asuka giggled.

听到这番威胁，真嗣轻声笑了。太阳已经完全升起，阳光从天空中倾泻而下，洒在两位半神身上。"好了，你该走了！他们不想让醉酒的人担心，对吧？" 明日香咯咯笑道。

"Fine... just ten more minutes..." Shinji laid down on the ground, having no intention of moving.

"好吧.....就再十分钟....." 真嗣躺在地上，完全没有要动的意思。

Asuka scowled and groaned, "Baka! Just move your ass! Or I'll do it in the hard way!"

明日香皱眉咂嘴，“笨蛋！快点动起来！不然我可要用硬办法了！”

Shinji felt a chill ran down his spine; last time it took Asuka literally kicking him down Mount Everest so that he would use the sea of Dirac to escape, and go back home. "Sorry..." Shinji quickly stood up before planting a quick kiss on Asuka's lips. "See ya later!"

真嗣感到一阵寒意沿着脊椎而下；上次明日香可是真的把他从珠穆朗玛峰上踢下去，他才利用狄拉克海逃回家。“对不起.....”真嗣迅速站起身，在明日香唇上轻吻一下。“回头见！”

"Hmph." Asuka waved her goodbye, and Shinji disappeared into the darkness.

“哼。”明日香挥手告别，真嗣消失在黑暗中。

Shinji came back to the apartment; he came out from the sea of Dirac which had the exit below his bed. He felt exasperated; the S2 organ was indeed an infinite power source, but it acted more like a self-charging battery. It could only hold a certain amount of energy, but energy won't stop regenerating. Using the sea of Dirac requires an insane amount of power. Shinji actually felt fatigued the first time ever since he time-traveled. 'Gotta be careful the next time, can't abuse my abilities,' he thought. Lying under his bed for a while, he felt the fatigue dissipate. 'Haven't heard any noise since I came back,' Shinji rolled over and came out of the bottom of his bed, standing up. 'Gotta make sure Misato doesn't suspect anything.' His heart sank as he saw the food that he prepared for Misato was gone. 'Not good... I didn't think Misato came back so early... She must've seen my note, tho.' The original plan was to come back before Misato; the note that he left was merely the failsafe for the worst.

真嗣回到了公寓；他从床下的狄拉克之海出口出来。他感到非常沮丧；S2 器官确实是一个无限能量源，但它更像是一个自我充电的电池。它只能储存一定量的能量，但能量不会停止再生。使用狄拉克之海需要大量的电力。真嗣自从穿越时空以来，第一次感到疲惫。'下次得小心点，不能滥用我的能力，'他想。在床下躺了一会儿，他感到疲劳消散了。'自从我回来后就没听到任何声音，'真嗣翻身从床底出来，站了起来。'得确保美里不会怀疑什么。'他看到为美里准备的食物不见了，心里一沉。'不好.....没想到美里这么早就回来了.....她肯定看到了我的便条，虽然。'原计划是在美里回来之前回来；他留下的便条只是最坏情况下的备用方案。

Shinji pulled out his phone and dialed Misato's number. "Shinji!" Misato's voice came immediately, "Where are you? I've

真嗣掏出手机，拨打了美里的号码。"真嗣！"美里的声音立刻传来，"你在哪儿？我

been looking for you! Section 2 said you never left the apartment, but I saw your note, and you weren't in the apartment!"  
一直在找你！第二区的人说你从未离开过公寓，但我看到了你的便条，你并不在公寓里！

"M-Misato-san, I..." Shinji's heart was pounding crazily; he needed to come up with a lie fast. He took a deep breath and decided to make a big bet, "I... I've been staying in... errr... Asuka's room!" Shinji realized that Misato must thought Asuka's dead, so he quickly came up with an idea,



"emmm... I just wanted to... clean up her room, since she... can't do it herself anymore..."

美里小姐，我....." 真嗣的心狂跳不已；他需要迅速编个谎话。他深吸一口气，决定赌一把，"我.....我一直待在.....呃.....明日香的房间里！" 真嗣意识到美里肯定以为明日香已经死了，于是他迅速想了个主意，"嗯.....我只是想.....帮她打扫房间，因为她.....再也不能自己打扫了....."

Misato frowned; she indeed hadn't checked Asuka's room back in the apartment. She never thought Shinji would have the guts to come into her room without permission. But then she realized that Asuka was gone, so maybe Shinji simply wanted to mourn her death. After all, you can't really get permissions from the dead, right? However, she was curious about the fact that she didn't hear any sadness from Shinji's tone. Still, she decided to ignore it for now. "I see... Shinji; I know you've missed her..." She sighed, "but... just stay safe, okay? I thought that you..."

美里皱了皱眉；她的确没有回公寓检查明日香的房间。她从未想过真嗣会有胆量未经允许进入她的房间。但随后她意识到明日香已经不在，也许真嗣只是想哀悼她的离去。毕竟，你无法从死者那里获得许可，对吧？然而，她对真嗣语气中没有流露出悲伤感到好奇。不过，她决定暂时忽略这一点。"我明白了.....真嗣；我知道你很想念她....." 她叹了口气，"但是.....注意安全，好吗？我以为你....."

"I'll be alright, Misato-san," Shinji interrupted.

"我会没事的，美里小姐，" 真嗣打断道。

Misato exhaled in relief. She made a U-turn and headed home.

美里松了口气，掉头回家了。

Shinji hanged up the call and released the breath that he had been holding. Looking around, he decided to make some dinner first.

"Tadaima." A familiar voice came from the door. Shinji nearly jumped up hearing the announcement, but he soon calmed down, realizing it 真嗣挂断电话，吐出了憋着的一口气。环顾四周，他决定先做点晚饭。"我回来了。"一个熟悉的声音从门口传来。真嗣差点跳起来，但很快平静下来，意识到是

was Rei, not Misato.

是丽，不是美里。

True to his thought, a blue-haired girl entered the dining area, her 正如他所料，一位蓝发女孩走进了用餐区，她的

expression unreadable. 表情难以捉摸。

"H-hello, Rei," Shinji greeted, "errr... you want something to drink?"

"你好，丽，" 真嗣打招呼道，"呃.....你想喝点什么吗？"

"Tea would suffice," Rei replied, "I come here to discuss personal matters with you."

"茶就可以了，" 丽回答，"我来这里是想和你讨论一些私事。"

"Okay..." Shinji said, feeling nervous since he had never seen Rei's expression like this. Minutes later, he came back with two cups of tea and sat down at the table across him sat Rei. "What do you wanna talk about, Rei?" Shinji asked.

"好的....." 真嗣说，感到有些紧张，因为他从未见过丽这样的表情。几分钟后，他拿着两杯茶回来，坐在桌子对面，丽也坐在那里。"你想谈些什么，丽？" 真嗣问道。

"Pilot Soryu is alive," Rei stated, her expression unchanged, "and you know it."

"碇司令还活着，" 绫波丽陈述道，她的表情毫无变化，"你知道这一点。"

Shinji blinked. "wha-what are y-you talking about?" He stammered, his heart rate skyrocketing. "Rei, we all saw..."

真嗣眨了眨眼。"什-什么你在说什么？" 他结巴着，心跳急剧加速。"绫波，我们都看到了....."

"I made the conclusion based on my observations," Rei interrupted, "there is no need of denial." She said with a degree of coldness.

"我是根据我的观察得出的结论，" 绫波打断道，"没有否认的必要。" 她带着几分冷淡说道。

"Wha-what observations, Rei?" Shinji stammered, still didn't want to give up.

"什-什么观察，丽？" 真嗣结巴着，仍不愿放弃。

"You smelt like Soryu-san after you came out from your entry plug, and your mental state is substantially different from the last time that you were informed of Spryu-san's death," Rei said, "these

"你从插入栓出来后身上有惣流同学的味道，而且你的精神状态与上次得知惣流同学死讯时大不相同，" 丽说道，"这些

undeniable facts lead to only logical conclusion-you had been  
不容置疑的事实只指向一个合乎逻辑的结论——你曾经

engaged in physical intimacy with Soryu-san inside your entry plug during  
the attack of eleventh Angel."

在第十一使徒袭击期间，与 Soryu-san 在你的插入栓内发生了身体上的亲密接触。

"But... I was the only one in the plug when the rescue team came!"  
但是.....救援队来的时候，插入栓里只有我一个人！

"That is related to my other observation," Rei's expression never softened  
a bit, "Both you and Soryu-can possess abnormally strong AT-Fields.  
Therefore, I conclude both of you possess Angelic powers, which were the  
reason for Soryu's escapes from her deaths."

那与我另一个观察有关，" 绫波的表情丝毫未变，"你和 Soryu 都能产生异常强大的  
AT 力场。因此，我得出结论，你们两人都拥有使徒般的力量，这也是 Soryu  
能逃脱死亡的原因。

Shinji knew the battle was lost; Ayanami's deductive reasoning was one of  
her most powerful skills. Most of the time, she simply didn't care about  
telling the truth to others; if she were interested in girls gossiping, she  
would have identified every single pair in the school in a matter of days  
whether they intend to hide their relationships or not. What's worse, the  
Angelic powers of Ayanami meant Shinji and Asuka had no escape from  
exposing their abilities to her. Shinji sighed in defeat, "Fine... Rei, you are  
right... Asuka's alive, and she's hiding. We are not ready to break the truth  
to others yet... they may want to do experiments on us or something,  
much less... eliminate us. We... errr... we simply want to defeat the Angels  
and live a happy life, that's all. So... could you please, please keep our  
secret?" Shinji pleaded; this was his last hope.

真嗣知道这场较量已经败了；绫波的逻辑推理是她最强大的技能之一。大多数时  
候，她根本不在乎对别人说实话；如果她对女生间的八卦感兴趣，她会在几天内  
识别出学校里的每一对情侣，无论他们是否打算隐藏关系。更糟糕的是，绫波的  
天使之力意味着真嗣和明日香无法在她面前隐藏自己的能力。真嗣叹息着认输，  
“好吧.....绫波，你是对的.....明日香还活着，她在躲藏。我们还没准备好向别人  
揭露真相.....他们可能会想对我们进行实验，甚至.....除掉我们。我们.....呃.....我

们只是想打败使徒，过上幸福的生活，仅此而已。所以.....请你，请你保守我们的秘密好吗？”真嗣恳求道；这是他最后的希望。

Rei's expression finally softened, "I do not have problems regarding keeping your secret, Shinji-Kun. However, I sense there is more information you are keeping." Rei said, "I appreciate you and Soryu's care toward me, and I intend to help you as much as I can.

绫波的表情终于缓和下来，“我并不介意保守你们的秘密，真嗣君。不过，我感觉你还有更多信息没有透露。”绫波说道，“我很感激你和惣流对我的关心，我也会尽我所能帮助你们。”

However," Rei began adding pressure on her AT-Field against Shinji's, the coldness and seriousness tone came back to her voice, "do not attempt uniting with Adam, or I will end you."

然而，“丽开始在她的 AT 力场上对真嗣施加压力，冷酷严肃的语气再次回到她的声音中，“不要试图与亚当融合，否则我会终结你。

Shinji's cold sweatdropped; he'd never seen Rei acting like this before, "Su-sure thing, Rei. We... we don't feel drawn to Adam." Sighing heavily, Shinji suddenly remembered something important to ask, "Rei... we are still friends, right?"

真嗣冷汗直冒；他从未见过丽这样，“当然，丽。我们.....我们并不觉得被亚当吸引。”重重地叹了口气，真嗣突然想起一件重要的事要问，“丽.....我们还是朋友，对吧？

Rei's expression changed to a small grin, "Of course, Shinji-Kun."

丽的表情变成了淡淡的微笑，“当然，真嗣君。

For the following weeks, Shinji never got an opportunity to sit in the entry plug and do sync tests; they need to make sure there was no any Angelic contamination left in Unit D or the testing chamber. He would spend time with Asuka in other parts of the world during weekends when Misato's out for work, and they talked a lot during nights. Shinji also helped Rei to open up to others. Additionally, he came up with a lie about Asuka's current situation, saying she had been doing a lot of tests in NERV and no time to attend school.

接下来的几周里，真嗣一直没有机会坐进插入栓进行同步测试；他们需要确保在 D 型机或测试室内没有任何天使污染残留。周末当美里外出工作时，他会和明日香在世界其他地方度过，晚上他们聊了很多。真嗣还帮助绫波打开心扉，与他人

交流。此外，他编造了一个关于明日香当前情况的谎言，称她在 NERV 进行了大量测试，没有时间上学。

On the day of his mother's death anniversary, Shinji decided to confront his father in front of Yui's grave.

在他母亲忌日那天，真嗣决定在唯的墓前与父亲对峙。

The graveyard had grown since the last time Shinji visited his mother. It looked like a few thousand more markers had been added. The immense amount of markers sticking out of the ground was quite unsettling. He stood idly over the monolithic marker that read his mother's name. Behind him stood his father, though he hadn't said a word since arriving a few minutes ago. The pilot of Unit 01 lowered his head and stared at the grave. Her name 'Yui Ikari' was spelled across it, as well as her birth and death year. He already knew that there was no body under the grave, even in his timeline.

自上次真嗣来看望母亲以来，墓地又扩大了不少。似乎又增加了几千个墓碑。大量墓碑矗立在地面上，显得颇为不安。他静静地站在刻有母亲名字的巨大墓碑前。他身后站着他的父亲，尽管几分钟前到达后他一句话也没说。初号机驾驶员低下头，凝视着墓碑。上面刻着她的名字‘碇唯’，以及她的出生和去世年份。他早已知道墓下没有遗体，即便在他的时间线里也是如此。

"I can't even remember what she looked like." He muttered. Commander Ikari kept a straight face as he looked over his son's shoulder.

“我甚至记不清她长什么样了。”他喃喃自语。碇司令面无表情地从儿子的肩膀上方望去。

"It's not the memories that we keep that are important." He spoke. "It's the legacy we leave behind."

“重要的不是我们保留的记忆。”他说道，“而是我们留下的遗产。”

"What was Mom's legacy, then?" Shinji turned his head to face his father, not fully able to look him in the eyes.

“那么，妈妈的遗产是什么呢？”真嗣转头面对他的父亲，却无法完全直视他的眼睛。

"Yui left behind two legacies." Gendo's tone was calm and collected as it always was. "The Evangelion, and you."

“唯留下了两份遗产。” 源渡的语气一如既往地平静而沉着，“初号机，还有你。”

"I'm her legacy?" Shinji couldn't believe what he thought he had heard; was his father actually showing some kind of support? He instead wanted to think that this was simply his father's way of manipulating him. He had to admit that this might work before, but now the hatred toward his father had wholly suppressed any positive feelings toward the Commander.

"我是她的遗产？" 真嗣不敢相信自己所听到的；难道父亲真的在表现出某种支持吗？他宁愿认为这只是父亲操纵他的一种方式。他不得不承认这可能在过去有效，但现在对父亲的恨意已经完全压制了对司令官的任何正面情感。

"Of course." He replied. "All the things that you accomplish will give meaning to Yui's life."

"当然。" 他回答道。"你所成就的一切都将赋予由依生命的意义。"

Shinji soon devised a plan to confront his father. By no means was Shinji afraid of him, so he decided to go on the hard way.

不久，真嗣便想出了一个面对父亲的计划。他绝非害怕父亲，因此决定选择艰难的道路。

"Hey Dad?" "What?" The old Ikari's tone was starting to sound a little bit irritable. "When you met Mom, how did you know you were in love?"

“嘿，爸爸？” “怎么了？” 老碇的语气开始显得有些不耐烦。“你遇见妈妈时，是怎么知道你爱上她的？”

Commander Ikari found relief in the fact that Shinji was facing away from him. Otherwise, he might've seen his eyes go wide from the question. 碇司令因真嗣背对着他而感到一丝宽慰。否则，他可能会看到自己的眼睛因这个问题而瞪大。

"Why do you ask?" "No reason." He lied. He knew that the Commander knew his relationship with Asuka, and he was sure that old Ikari would abuse it.

"你为什么问这个？" "没什么原因。" 他撒了谎。他知道指挥官了解他与明日香的关系，他确信那位老碇会利用这一点。

"Is this about the Second Child?" His voice was like granite. 'Bingo,' Shinji thought, 'Phase 1 complete. Now engage phase 2.'

"这是关于二号机驾驶员的事吗？" 他的声音如同花岗岩般坚硬。'答对了，' 真嗣心想，'第一阶段完成。现在进入第二阶段。'

"You could say that," Shinji said with a mental grin, "How do you know that she was the one for your life?"

"你可以这么说，" 真嗣在心里暗笑，"你怎么知道她是你生命中的那个人？"

Gendo paused for a few seconds, then stated, "The Second Child is no more. I advise you to sever your emotional ties with her." His cold words made Shinji begin to feel hot, like a burning sensation was starting to erupt in his chest. "The less your synch scores are affected by outside variables, the better."

源堂停顿了几秒，然后陈述道：“第二适格者已不复存在。我建议你切断与她的情感联系。”他冰冷的话语让真嗣开始感到灼热，仿佛胸中即将爆发出燃烧的感觉。“你的同步率受外界因素影响越小，越好。”

Shinji didn't give him a response, instead keeping his eyes focused on his mother's name. The hotness in his chest felt like it was about to set his heart up in a blaze of fire, but after a moment of concentration, the burning feeling began to subside.

真嗣没有回应他，而是继续凝视着母亲的名字。胸中的炽热感仿佛要将心脏点燃，但在片刻的专注后，那燃烧的感觉开始消退。

"But my mother is no more as well," Shinji couldn't help but grin as his father fell into his trap like he thought, "then why are you still doing this?"

“但我的母亲也已不在了，”真嗣忍不住露出笑容，正如他所料，父亲落入了他的圈套，“那你为何还在做这些？”

Although Gendo used his glasses to hide his eyes, he couldn't hide the twitch of his body. Shinji was trying hard to maintain his composure, not to laugh. 尽管源渡用他的眼镜遮住了双眼，但他身体的抽搐却无法掩饰。真嗣正努力保持镇定，不让自己笑出声来。

"That is none of your concern." Gendo said, "Your job is to defeat the Angels. There is no other use of you, and you are easily replaceable if you fail to meet expectations."

“那不关你的事。”源渡说道，“你的任务是击败使徒。你没有其他用处，如果达不到期望，你随时可以被替换。”

"Bullshit," Gendo's eyes went wide at Shinji's sudden curse; he had never expected that his submissive son would swear at him. "I know that I'm the only one *she* would allow for piloting Unit D."

“胡说八道，”碇司令听到真嗣突然的咒骂，眼睛瞪得老大；他从未料到自己顺从的儿子会对他爆粗口。“我知道她是唯一允许我驾驶 D 单位的人。”

Gendo felt a chill ran down his spine at Shinji's emphasis on the word 'she'. 'How? How does he knows... maybe it's just a coincidence... but the way he stressed it... I can't take any risks... this might be a threat to my scenario...' Although his mind was racing, he still needed to act cool. "We shall see, *pilot*." He said the last word forcefully.

听到真嗣强调“她”这个词，碇司令感到一阵寒意顺着脊梁骨而下。“怎么可能？他怎么知道的.....也许只是巧合.....但他强调的方式.....我不能冒任何风险.....这可能威胁到我的计划.....”尽管思绪飞转，他仍需保持冷静。“我们拭目以待，驾驶员。”他加重了“驾驶员”这个词的语气。

Just at this moment, the sound of a loud buzz began to emerge behind them, causing for Shinji to turn around and see a VTOL starting to make touchdown about twenty meters away from him and his father.

Commander Ikari seemed actually relieved by all this. "I have to go now." Commander Ikari spoke before turning around, making his way to the large aircraft.

就在这时，身后传来一阵响亮的嗡嗡声，真嗣转身看到一架垂直起降飞机正准备在离他和父亲二十米远的地方降落。碇司令似乎对此松了一口气。“我现在得走了。”碇司令说完便转身，向那架大型飞机走去。

Shinji silently looked onward as his father made his departure. He took a mental note that Ayanami was not in the VTOL this time, maybe a good sign. He felt *ecstatic* to actually make his father

真嗣默默地注视着父亲离去。他暗自记下这次绫波没有在 VTOL 上，或许是个好兆头。他感到欣喜若狂，竟然能让父亲在他的话语中感到不适，同时又不至于透露太多信息给那个过于敏感的男人。

uncomfortable at his words, without leaking too much knowledge to the oversensitive man.

回到公寓，真嗣想拉小提琴了。不仅仅是因为他与父亲的对抗取得了好结果，还因为今天是他和明日香第一次接吻的日子。他想保持这种仪式感，于是拿出小提琴，开始演奏。



Coming back to the apartment, Shinji felt like playing his cello. Not only because he was happy about the outcome of his confrontation with his father, but also today was the day he and Asuka first kissed. He wanted to maintain the sense of ceremony, so he pulled out his cello and started playing.

回到公寓，真嗣想拉小提琴了。不仅仅是因为他与父亲的对抗取得了好结果，还因为今天是他和明日香第一次接吻的日子。他想保持这种仪式感，于是拿出小提琴，开始演奏。

The music carried him away as the melody flowed through him like a river of sound. Engulfed in the melody of Bach Cello Suite No.1, he could almost forget about all of the troubles he had been through, all of the hardships he had faced, all of it felt as though it didn't even exist. It was just him, his bow, and his cello. As he made his final stroke across the strings, he could hear the sound of clapping coming from behind him. 音乐将他带入忘我的境地，旋律如同一股声音的河流在他体内流淌。沉浸在巴赫大提琴组曲第 1 号的美妙旋律中，他几乎可以忘却所有经历过的烦恼，所有面对过的艰辛，一切仿佛都不复存在。只有他，他的弓，和他的大提琴。当他最后一次划过琴弦，他听到了身后传来的掌声。

He didn't even need to turn around to know who was clapping, "Asuka! I knew you would come back here today."

他甚至不需要转身就知道是谁在鼓掌，“明日香！我就知道你今天会回到这里。”

True to his words, Asuka was standing at the entrance of the hallway, smiling at him. "I've always been amazed by your talent in music, Shinji." 正如他所说，明日香站在走廊的入口处，微笑着看着他。“我一直对你的音乐才华感到惊叹，真嗣。”

Shinji smiled back, his hands scratching the back of his head, his face blushed a shade of red. He had zero resistance against Asuka's sincere praises. "T-thanks, Asuka. Emm... I thought you've been playing violin, right? Maybe we could play together?"

真嗣回以微笑，双手挠着后脑勺，脸上泛起一抹红晕。他对明日香真挚的赞美毫无抵抗力。“谢谢你，明日香。嗯.....我记得你在拉小提琴，对吧？或许我们可以一起演奏？”

Asuka giggled; of course, she had always wanted to play something with Shinji together, and she had prepared for it. Asuka pulled out a violin from behind the wall, "Gah, I've been waiting for a while now. Let's get ready!" 明日香咯咯笑了起来；当然，她一直想和真嗣一起演奏些什么，并且为此做好了准备。明日香从墙后拿出一把小提琴，“啊，我已经等了一会儿了。我们准备开始吧！”

Shinji was more than surprised to see that Asuka actually had been preparing for this special day. He couldn't help but smile wider. 看到明日香真的为这个特别的日子做好了准备，真嗣感到非常惊讶。他忍不住笑得更开了。

Pulling out another chair from the table, he invited Asuka to sit 他从桌下又拉出一把椅子，邀请明日香坐下

beside him, so they could see each other's moves clearly. Asuka sat down and readied her instrument, waiting for Shinji to give the signal. 坐在他旁边，这样他们就能清楚地看到对方的动作。明日香坐定，准备好她的乐器，等待真嗣发出信号。

They looked into each other's eyes for a moment, and nodded simultaneously.

他们彼此对视了一会儿，然后同时点了点头。

Once again music flooded the apartment, and time disappeared for both of them.

音乐再次充满了公寓，时间对他们两人而言仿佛消失了。

After hours of playing, the pilots finally pulled to a stop, content smiles on both of their faces. "Y-you played well, Asuka." Shinji complimented, which caused Asuka to blush a little. After all, it was a compliment from someone who was much more proficient in music than her. "What do you expect, Baka-Shinji?" 'that's the tsundere' "and... you played well, too." "经过数小时的演奏，两位驾驶员终于停了下来，脸上都挂着满意的微笑。“你弹得很好，明日香。”真嗣称赞道，这让明日香微微脸红。毕竟，这是来自一个比她更擅长音乐的人的赞美。“你以为呢，笨蛋真嗣？”‘这就是傲娇’“而且.....你也弹得很好。”

Shinji chuckled, "I have a question, tho" seeing he got Asuka's attention, he continued, "since today is... *that* day, I wanna ask... when you asked for

a kiss, what were you thinking? What was the whole 'bored' thing all about?"

"真嗣轻笑道：“不过我有个问题”，看到明日香投来注意力，他继续说，“既然今天是.....那个日子，我想问.....你当时要求接吻时，在想什么？那个‘无聊’的说法又是怎么回事？” ”

Asuka had been kinda expecting this question. Surely back then, it was so weird and sudden to ask something like that, but she had her reasons.

"Ahem," she cleared her throat, "It was that Kaji's hooked up with Misato again, and I felt left out. I've always wanted to get your attention, but none of my other hints worked. So I decided to make a bold move."

"明日香其实预料到了这个问题。当然，当时提出那样的要求既奇怪又突然，但她有自己的理由。“咳咳，”她清了清嗓子，“那时加治又和美里在一起了，我感觉被冷落了。我一直想引起你的注意，但我的其他暗示都没用。所以我决定采取大胆的行动。” ”

"Well, it seemed I was so dense to not even notice such an obvious hint..." Shinji made a nervous laugh, "Sorry..."

"唉，我真是迟钝到连这么明显的暗示都没注意到....." 真嗣尴尬地笑了笑，"对不起....."

"What are you apologizing for, Baka?"

"你为什么要道歉，笨蛋？"

"You must've thought I rejected you... I mean, your counterpart." Shinji said with a guilt look in his eyes, "I can't imagine how much it hurt you..."

"你一定以为我拒绝了你.....我是说，你的另一个自己。" 真嗣眼中带着愧疚，"我无法想象这让你有多难过....."

Asuka stood up and walked in front of Shinji. Before he could react, she leaned over and pulled Shinji into a kiss, effectively shutting him up. Shinji was more than happy to return it; the kiss grew more and more passionate as time went by.

明日香站起身，走到真嗣面前。还没等他反应过来，她便俯身将真嗣拉入一个吻，有效地让他闭上了嘴。真嗣非常乐意回应；随着时间的推移，这个吻变得越来越热烈。

His body fell limp as he felt her push her weight against him, forcing him to lean against Pen Pen's freezer while they continued to kiss. The hot

spring penguin started to waddle his way into the kitchen and stopped in his tracks when he saw the two teens were blocking the way to his freezer. He looked up curiously at the two, wondering what it was they were doing. Shrugging it off, he waddled his way back out of the kitchen to sleep in Misato's bed. He could feel Asuka's tongue playfully dancing with his, and shivers went down his spine when he heard her moan. Slowly the kiss started to die down in intensity, and eventually, the redhead pulled herself away from him, keeping her teeth lightly pressed down on his tongue as she slowly pulled away, making the kiss last as long as possible. 他的身体瘫软下来，感觉到她将体重压向他，迫使他靠在 Pen Pen 的冰箱上继续接吻。温泉企鹅开始蹒跚地走向厨房，但当她看到两个青少年挡住了通往冰箱的路时，便停下了脚步。他好奇地抬头看着两人，想知道他们在做什么。耸了耸肩，他蹒跚地走回厨房，打算在美里床上睡觉。他能感觉到明日香的舌头与他嬉戏，当听到她的呻吟时，他不禁打了个寒颤。慢慢地，这个吻的强度开始减弱，最终，红发女孩将自己从他身边拉开，牙齿轻轻压在他的舌头上，缓缓地拉开，尽可能地延长这个吻。

"I... I think I've got your message," Shinji said. "You'd better!" Asuka pouted.

“我.....我想我明白你的意思了，”真嗣说。“你最好明白！”明日香撅嘴道。

Misato bent over a trashcan in a back alley, vomiting into it while Kaji held her hair back. Katsuragi's hours of binging finally came to a peak at her twelfth shot.

美里弯腰靠在一个后巷的垃圾桶上，呕吐着，而加持帮她撩起头发。葛城连续数小时的狂饮终于在她喝下第十二杯时达到了顶峰。

She retched one last time before slumping down, going limp as her ex-lover held onto her to keep her on her feet. He handed her a bottle of water he could grab before heading out, which she was more than happy to snatch out of his hands. The lavender-haired woman chugged down a few gulps, and then spit out the rest into the alleyway, getting rid of anything that was left behind in the transition from her stomach to the trashcan.

她最后一次干呕后瘫软下来，前恋人扶着她以免她倒下。他递给她出门前抓起的一瓶水，她急切地从他手中夺过。紫发的女子猛灌了几口，然后将剩下的水吐在巷子里，清除掉从胃里到垃圾桶的所有残留物。

"We're not in college anymore." Kaji shook his head as he turned her around and lifted her up onto his back, holding her legs up with his hands while she loosely wrapped her arms around his neck, her high

“我们已经不是大学生了。”加持摇着头，将她转过身来背起，双手托住她的双腿，而她松松地环住他的脖子，醉意朦胧。

heels dangling from her fingers. "You don't need to drink yourself  
高跟鞋在她手指间晃动。 “你不必把自己灌醉”

sick." 到吐。 "

"Asuka's gone again, and Shinji's been acting weirdly," Misato said, "you'd drink a lot too if you were me."

“明日香又不见了，真嗣的行为也变得古怪，”美里说，“如果换成是我，也会喝很多的。”

"You and me both know this has nothing to do with Asuka or Shinji," His eyes looked back at Misato, who was resting her head on his right shoulder.

“你我都知道这跟明日香或真嗣无关，”他的目光回到美里身上，她正将头靠在他的右肩上休息。

"Kaji." Misato spoke, breaking the silence. "I think I've changed."

"加持。”美里打破了沉默。“我想我变了。”

"You're right." He smirked. "You're even prettier." He always was quite the charmer. The lavender-haired woman had to hide her smile. "Not what I meant." Her tone sounded much more serious, a strong contrast from Kaji's lightheartedness. She took in a deep breath and exhaled before continuing. "I'm sorry that I wanted to break up with you. When I told you there was another man, I lied." She looked over at him, seeing that he kept his eyes straight forward, not the least bit phased by her words. "But you already knew that, didn't you?"

"你说得对。”他微微一笑。“你甚至更美了。”他总是那么迷人。这位紫发女子不得不掩饰自己的笑容。“我不是那个意思。”她的语气听起来严肃得多，与加持的轻松态度形成鲜明对比。她深吸一口气，然后缓缓吐出，继续说道。“对不起，我曾想和你分手。当我告诉你有另一个男人时，我撒了谎。”她看向他，发现他目光直视前方，对她说的话丝毫不为所动。“但你早就知道了吧？”

"No." He lied. Of course he knew there was never another man. Half of his job was to be able to read people. From the day she broke up with him, he knew that she was lying to him.

"不。" 他撒了谎。当然他知道从没有另一个男人。他工作的一半能力就是能读懂人心。从她与他分手的那天起，他就知道她在对他撒谎。

Misato raised her head and looked up at the stars. There were quite a few of them out tonight. A site that was rarely seen in the metropolitan area of Tokyo-3. "Because I just realized how much like my father you were." Kaji kept his eyes focused on her, but did not rear his head. "I couldn't believe that I wanted a man just like my father. I was terrified." Misato looked over at her ex-lover and frowned. "So I ran. I was afraid of being with you. I thought I hated my father." She took in a breath, sucking in the night air. 美里抬起头，仰望着星空。今晚的星星相当多。这在东京-3 的大都会区是难得一见的景象。"因为我刚刚意识到你有多像我父亲。" 加持始终注视着她，但没有抬起头。"我无法相信我想要一个像我父亲一样的男人。我感到害怕。" 美里看向她的前男友，皱起了眉头。"所以我逃了。我害怕和你在一起。我以为我讨厌我父亲。" 她深吸一口气，吸入夜晚的空气。

"And then I fell in love with a man just like him." She lowered her head. "I thought joining NERV would be a way to sever those ties.

"然后我爱上了像他一样的男人。" 她低下头。"我以为加入 NERV 会是一种切断这些联系的方式。

And then it turned out my father was with NERV. So then I just tried  
结果发现我父亲在 NERV 工作。于是我就试图

to bury it all by swearing my life to avenge him by killing the Angels." She stopped walking, and looked down at the sidewalk, Kaji stopping along with her.

"通过发誓用生命来为他复仇，消灭使徒，来埋葬这一切。" 她停下脚步，低头看着人行道，加持也跟着她停了下来。

"You chose that path, Katsuragi." He tried his best to sound reassuring.

"You don't have to apologize to anyone."

"你选择了那条路，葛城。" 他尽力让自己的声音听起来令人安心。"你不需要向任何人道歉。"

"Don't bullshit me, Kaji! That was not my choice!" She snapped. "I just ran away! I just wanted to escape from the real world and my father!"

"别糊弄我，加持！那不是我的选择！"她厉声说道。"我只是逃跑了！我只是想逃离现实世界和我父亲！"

A few stifling tears started to emerge. "I'm no better than Shinji is." She stopped to wipe away the salty cascades.

几滴压抑的泪水开始涌出。"我和真嗣没什么两样。"她停下来擦去咸涩的泪水。

"Who am I kidding? Even Shinji is better than me! Ever since Asuka came around, he's been acting like he has a purpose. Like he has a desire to fight the Angels. God I'm so pathetic."

"我这是在自欺欺人吗？就连真嗣都比我强！自从明日香出现后，他就表现得像是有目标一样。像是有战斗使徒的欲望。天啊，我真是可悲。"

"Don't say that." "别这么说。"

"I don't deserve to be his guardian. How can I help him when he's already better than me? He's found purpose without my help. Hell, look at me! I couldn't even talk to you about this until I was stumbling drunk!"

"我不配做他的监护人。他都已经比我强了，我还能怎么帮他？他没我也找到了自己的目标。见鬼，看看我！我甚至要喝得烂醉才能跟你谈这件事！"

"Stop it!" Kaji yelled, trying to cease her self-loathing.

"别这样！"卡吉喊道，试图阻止她的自我厌恶。

"I'm worthless!" She cried. "I'm absolutely worth-" She was brought to silence as Kaji held her close to him and locked his lips with hers. Misato's entire body began to tremble in his arms as he kissed her. Suddenly she felt a lightness in her left hand as she dropped her high heels onto the ground, making a hollow clack as they landed.

"我一文不值！"她哭喊着，"我绝对是有价值的——"她的话语被卡吉紧紧拥入怀中并吻住她的唇所打断。美里在他怀中全身颤抖，随着他的亲吻，她突然感到左手一轻，高跟鞋掉落在地，发出空洞的咔嚓声。

She didn't care, though.

但她并不在意。

The only thing that she cared that time was Kaji.

那时她唯一在乎的只有卡吉。

One day later, deep inside of the core of NERV's Terminal Dogma, Kaji punched away at the keypad to activate the keycard terminal to the door many had come to refer as 'The Gate to Heaven'.

一天后，在 NERV 的终端教条深处，Kaji 用力敲打着键盘，激活了通往那扇被许多人称为‘通向天堂之门’的门禁终端。

Even though his focus was on his work, he couldn't help but think back to the night before. How he had to carry Misato to her room after she had passed out in the elevator to her apartment. He also couldn't help but ponder on the image of Shinji singing and smiling while reading his manga. Kaji felt so confused since Shinji must've known that Asuka's gone, but he acted like Asuka had just confessed to him. His trailing thoughts were brought to an end as he felt the cold metal of a gun barrel against the back of his head. He'd been expecting this. "Hi." he held his hands up, holding the keycard in hand. "Feeling better?"

尽管他的注意力集中在工作上，但他不禁回想起前一晚。他不得不在 Misato 在通往她公寓的电梯里昏倒后，将她抱回房间。他还忍不住思考着 Shinji 边唱歌边微笑读漫画的画面。Kaji 感到非常困惑，因为 Shinji 肯定知道 Asuka 已经离开了，但他表现得就像 Asuka 刚刚向他表白一样。正当他陷入沉思时，他感觉到一个冰冷的枪口抵在了他的后脑勺上。他早有预料。“嗨。”他举起双手，手里还拿着门禁卡。“感觉好些了吗？”

"I'm sober now, thank you." Misato's voice was sarcastically cold. "I'm glad to hear that."

“我现在清醒了，谢谢。”Misato 的声音带着讽刺的冷淡。“很高兴听到这个。”

"Cut the bullshit." She hissed. "Is this your real profession, or is this just something you do part-time?"

"别扯淡了。"她低声怒道，"这是你的真实职业，还是你只是兼职玩玩？"

"So I guess you've figured me out, huh?" He didn't sound as threatened as Katsuragi felt he should have.

"看来你已经看穿我了，嗯？"他的语气并没有像 Katsuragi 感觉中那样受到威胁。

"Did Ikari put you up to this?"

"是碇让你这么做的吗？"



"No." She shook her head. "This was of my own initiative. You have to realize that if you keep spying on NERV, you will die."

"不。" 她摇了摇头。"这是我自己的决定。你必须明白，如果你继续监视 NERV，你会死的。"

"As long as Commander Ikari still needs me, I'll stay alive for longer." He started to frown, though she couldn't see it. "Although I am sorry I kept this a secret from you."

"只要碇司令还需要我，我就能活得更久。" 他开始皱眉，尽管她看不见。"虽然我很抱歉对你隐瞒了这件事。"

"I'll let it pass." Misato began to slowly loosen her grip on the gun, but did not remove it from the back of his head. "Consider it payback for your help yesterday."

"我就当扯平了吧。" 美里开始慢慢松开握枪的手，但没有将枪从他脑后移开。"就当是昨天你帮忙的回报。"

"I appreciate that." He exhaled. "But you should know that Commander Ikari and Ritsuko are hiding something from you." Without another word, his hand slid the red keycard down the reader before Misato could even react. The terminal made a ding as the huge doors began to open.

"我很感激。" 他呼出一口气。"但你应该知道，碇司令和律子对你隐瞒了些什么。" 没等美里反应过来，他的手已经将红色钥匙卡滑过读卡器。终端发出一声叮响，巨大的门开始缓缓打开。

"Oh my God." Misato gasped, dropping her gun to the floor. Before her in this massive darkened room was a giant red cross about fifty meters tall, and thirty meters wide. Pinned to it was a bulbous white humanoid creature. Its face was hidden by a seven-eyed mask, or perhaps its face was the mask. Its lower half seemed to be missing, though. What purposed it served was unknown to Misato. However it made the sight all the more unsettling. "There's no way. It can't be!"

"哦，我的天。" 美里倒吸一口气，手中的枪掉落在地。在她面前这个巨大的昏暗房间里，有一个高达五十米、宽三十米的巨大红色十字架。上面钉着一个球状的白色人形生物。它的脸被一个七眼的假面遮住，或者说那假面就是它的脸。它的下半身似乎缺失了。这个生物的对美里来说是个谜，但这景象却更加令人不安。"不可能，这绝对不可能！"

"Indeed it is." Kaji put his hands in his pockets. "The key to Second Impact, and everything that has happened since then. This is Adam."

"确实如此。" 加持将手插进口袋。"第二次冲击的关键，以及自那以来发生的一切。这就是亚当。"

"Adam." Misato echoed the name. "But why is the first Angel here?" She trusted NERV. She knew that what they did was for the betterment of mankind. However, for them to be sheltering the very being that made the world the savage wreck that it is now without telling her made her question her faith in the organization. "You're right." She growled. "I don't know NERV at all."

“亚当。” 葛城重复了这个名字。“但为什么第一个使徒会在这里？” 她信任 NERV。她知道他们所做的一切都是为了人类的福祉。然而，他们竟然庇护着这个让世界变成如今这般野蛮废墟的存在，而没有告诉她，这让她开始质疑自己对组织的信任。“你说得对。” 她低吼道。“我根本不了解 NERV。”

Kaji chuckled, "you think this is all I got?" He pulled out a PDA from his inner pocket, "I'd like to discuss this with you." On the screen it showed MAGI's analysis of the Second Child, Asuka Langley Soryu. "You told me she was dead, but apparently MAGI picked up something in France." 加持轻笑一声，“你以为这就是全部？” 他从内袋里掏出一个 PDA，“我想和你讨论一下这个。” 屏幕上显示着 MAGI 对第二适格者，惣流·明日香·兰格雷的分析。“你告诉我她已经死了，但显然 MAGI 在法国检测到了一些东西。”

Misato scanned the information on the screen, her right hand covering her mouth. "Facial image analysis... ninety-one percent similarity?" Misato swallowed hard, "How... is this even possible?"

美里扫视着屏幕上的信息，右手捂住嘴巴。“面部图像分析.....百分之九十一的相似度？” 美里艰难地咽了咽口水，“这.....怎么可能？”

"Indeed." Kaji said, "The satellite picked up the image outside a musical instrument store in France. If that's really her, how did she get to France without leaving any traces in the transportation system? MAGI has been monitoring it non-stop." Kaji sighed, "Not

" "确实。" 加持说道，“卫星在法国一家乐器店外捕捉到了她的影像。如果那真的是她，她是怎么在没有留下任何交通系统痕迹的情况下到达法国的？MAGI 一直在不间断地监控着。” 加持叹了口气，“不仅如此，”

mentioning what you guys all saw what happened inside her entry  
"你们还都看到了她进入插入栓后发生的事情。"

plug."

"Maybe it's just a glitch... or someone that looked really like her?" "You know that MAGI doesn't glitch," Kaji said, sighing. "there are so

“也许只是个故障.....或者是个长得非常像她的人？” “你知道 MAGI 不会出故障的。” 加持叹了口气说，“NERV 对我们隐瞒了太多事情，葛城。”

many things NERV's been hiding from us, Katsuragi."

“很多事情 NERV 一直对我们隐瞒，葛城。”

Two weeks later, Shinji was walking on the street, singing. Tomorrow would be Unit D's first activation test since the last Angel attack; he was thrilled to talk to his mother. However, as he felt his phone's vibration, he knew his reunion with his mother would be in advance.

两周后，真嗣走在街上，哼着歌。明天将是自上次使徒袭击以来 D 单位的首次启动测试；他很兴奋能和母亲交谈。然而，当他感觉到手机的震动时，他知道与母亲的团聚将提前到来。

In the sky, a surrealistic giant sphere took form above the city of Tokyo-3. Black and white lines swerved across its surface like those found in optical illusions. It didn't make a sound, nor did it move from its position above the metropolis. It merely floated there as all those below it were sucked into its dark grip.

天空中，一个超现实主义的巨大球体在东京-3 市上方成形。黑白线条在其表面蜿蜒，如同视错觉图案一般。它无声无息，也不从其位于大都市上方的位置移动。它只是静静地悬浮在那里，而下方的一切都被其黑暗的掌控所吸引。

"The target's showing Pattern Orange!" Makoto announced, "we can't know if it's an Angel or not!"

“目标显示为橙色模式！” 真希波宣布，“我们无法确定它是不是使徒！”

"It's bound to be an Angel," Misato said, "Prepare Unit D and Unit 00 for launch."

“肯定是使徒，” 美里说，“准备 D 型机和 00 型机发射。”

Shinji had just finished changing into his plug suit, and he walked into Eva cages. Standing right in front of Unit D, he looked into its eyes, thinking,

'Mother, let's do this.' He climbed into the entry plug, and waited for activation.

真嗣刚刚换上他的插入栓服，走进了 EVA 机库。站在 D 型机前，他凝视着它的眼睛，心中默念：'母亲，我们开始吧。'他爬进插入栓，等待启动。

Minutes later, Shinji was sent up to the ground, Unit 00 stood 200 meters aside from him, holding a pallet rifle in its hands. "This thing doesn't even have an AT-Field," Misato's voice came in the comms, "Shinji, you'll approach the target with caution, Rei, once Shinji enters 50 meters range of the Angel, you'll execute a simultaneous attack on the target; Shinji will be using his prog axe, and Rei with

几分钟后，真嗣被送上地面，零号机站在他 200 米外，手持一把托盘步枪。"这东西连 AT 力场都没有，"美里在通讯中说道，"真嗣，你要谨慎接近目标，绫波，一旦真嗣进入天使 50 米范围内，你就同时对目标发起攻击；真嗣用他的程序斧，绫波用

the rifle. Understood?" 步枪。明白了吗？

"Roger." Both pilots said.

"罗杰。" 两位驾驶员同时说道。

Shinji willed his Eva to walk towards the sphere slowly. Of course, he didn't want to stay in the darkness again for 12 hours, but he didn't know if there were any other ways to defeat the Angel. Taking a deep breath, Shinji picked up his speed. Pulling out his prog axe, Shinji jumped on one of the buildings and leaped into the air, the prog axe slicing down with a whirring sound of the air. At the same time, Rei fired her rifle; as expected, the black sphere disappeared before either of them can make a hit.

真嗣命令他的 Eva 慢慢走向球体。当然，他不想再次在黑暗中停留 12 小时，但他不知道是否有其他方法击败使徒。深吸一口气，真嗣加快了速度。他拔出电锯斧，跳上一座建筑，一跃而起，电锯斧带着空气的呼啸声劈下。与此同时，绫波发射了她的步枪；不出所料，黑色球体在他们击中之前消失了。

"Pattern Blue confirmed! AT-Field detected!" Makoto shouted, "Oh my god! It's right beneath Unit D!"

"蓝色模式确认！AT 力场侦测到！" 真希斗喊道，"我的天！就在 D 单位正下方！"

"Shinji! Get out of there!" Misato yelled into the comms as she saw a black shadow appeared under Unit D.

“真嗣！快离开那里！”美里对着通讯器大喊，因为她看到一个黑色阴影出现在 D 型机下方。

Shinji, on the other hand, made no attempts to escape. 'If I get out the Angel may target Rei instead, and it's not like I'll die even if the power runs out. Besides, I could really use the time to talk with my mother.'

Having made his decision, Shinji ducked down into the nothingness.

然而，真嗣并没有试图逃脱。‘如果我出去，使徒可能会转而攻击绫波，而且就算能量耗尽我也不至于丧命。再说，我正好可以利用这个时间和我母亲谈谈。’下定决心后，真嗣潜入了虚无之中。

The people on the command deck watched in awe as Unit D disappeared into the darkness. "The sea of Dirac..." Ritsuko murmured, fear in her eyes. 指挥舱内的人们惊愕地看着 D 型机消失在黑暗中。“狄拉克海……”律子低声说道，眼中流露出恐惧。

The NERV staff gathered around a whiteboard Ritsuko had managed to scour from inside a nearby building. On it was numerous diagrams and graphs and a few equations that would appear like a foreign language to a normal person, but to those gathered around, it was like reading from a textbook. Dr. Akagi stood upfront with a nightstick she had borrowed from one of the security personnel and used it to point out the different equations and charts as she spoke.

NERV 的工作人员们围聚在一块白板前，这是赤木律子从附近建筑中设法搜寻到的。白板上布满了各种图表和方程式，对普通人来说宛如天书，但在场的众人却如同翻阅教科书一般熟悉。赤木博士站在前方，手中拿着从一名安保人员那里借来的警棍，边讲解边用它指向不同的方程式和图表。

"From what our scanners have detected, it seems that the sphere above the city has no AT-Field of its own. However there is an  
根据我们的扫描结果显示，城市上空的球体本身似乎不具备 AT 力场。然而，从其内部的阴影中发出了一种

inverted AT-Field coming from within the shadow."

倒置的 AT 力场。

"So does that mean the shadow is the Angel?" Misato felt this was the direction Dr. Akagi was going, but felt she needed to have her clarify. "那么，这是否意味着影子就是使徒？" 美里觉得这就是赤木博士要表达的意思，但她觉得需要对方明确说明。

"Exactly." She nodded, lowering the nightstick to her side. "However, the region of space which the Angel occupies can only be defined by abstract mathematics. Essentially it's a Dirac sea. For all we know it could be a portal to another universe." Katsuragi raised her hand, feeling as though she were back in the lecture halls from her college days "Then what about the sphere?"

"正是如此。" 她点头，将夜杖放低至身侧。"然而，使徒所占据的空间区域只能通过抽象数学来定义。本质上它是一个狄拉克海。据我们所知，它可能是一个通往另一个宇宙的门户。" 葛城举起手，感觉自己仿佛回到了大学时代的讲堂里，"那么，那个球体呢？"

"It disappears when the imaginary circa of the body closes. So in a way you could say it is a shadow of sorts."

"当身体的虚数周期闭合时，它就会消失。所以可以说，它在某种程度上是一种影子。"

"So basically the sea of Dirac is our target?" The blonde nodded.

"所以基本上，狄拉克之海就是我们的目标？" 金发女子点了点头。

Misato suddenly remembered something, "Wait... wasn't the Dirac sea the thing that saved Asuka inside the volcano?"

美里突然想起了什么，"等等.....狄拉克之海不就是在火山中救了明日香的东西吗？"

Ritsuko nodded again, "Yes. So I believe this is the Angel that saved her... or..." She had made the worst assumption on the situation.

律子再次点头，"是的。所以我相信这就是那个救了她的使徒.....或者....." 她对当前情况做出了最糟糕的假设。

Misato felt her cold sweat dropping, "Don't you dare tell me this *thing* 美里感到冷汗直冒，心想："你可别告诉我这就是"

is Asuka." 明日香。

Ritsuko narrowed her eyes, "You are always so perceptive, Major." She pulled out a PDA, the data on the screen showing the MAGI had predicted a 78% possibility of Asuka being the Angel.

律子眯起眼睛, "你总是这么敏锐, 美里少校。" 她拿出一个 PDA, 屏幕上的数据显示 MAGI 预测明日香成为使徒的可能性高达 78%。

Misato felt her knees weaken as she almost fell on the ground. "No no no no no no..." She shot a glare at Ritsuko, "It's impossible! She's a normal teenager girl! She's not *that thing*!"

美里感到膝盖发软, 差点摔倒在地。 "不不不不不不....." 她向律子投去愤怒的目光, "这不可能! 她只是个普通的女高中生! 她不是那种东西! "

"As impossible as it seems, it's the most plausible conclusion."

"尽管听起来难以置信, 但这是最合理的结论。"

"What are we going to do then?" Misato asked, her voice trembling. She had always hated Angels, but If that... *thing* was really Asuka,

" "那我们该怎么办? " 美里颤抖着声音问道。她一直憎恨使徒, 但如果那.....东西真的是明日香, "

she would have hesitated badly at making the decision.

她本会在做出决定时犹豫不决。

"We are planning to use all 992 existing N2 mines to strike the target,"

Ritsuko said in a plain tone, not caring anything except the recovery of Unit D, "while simultaneously activating the AT-Field in Eva Unit 00. In a way that would disrupt the hypothetical circa that encloses the Angel's pocket interior. If we concentrate enough explosive power during that same microsecond, we can destroy the Angel and the Dirac sea along with it."

"我们计划利用所有 992 枚现有的 N2 地雷攻击目标, " 赤木律子以平淡的语气说道, 除了 D 单位的回收外, 她什么都不关心, "同时激活 EVA 零号机的 AT 力场。以一种方式扰乱包围天使口袋内部假设的周界。如果我们能在同一微秒内集中足够的爆炸力, 我们就能摧毁天使及其伴随的狄拉克海。"

"But that would..." Misato felt a surge of anger shot up her body, "what about Shinji? There's no way he could survive that kind of blast!"

"但那样的话..." 美里感到一股怒火涌上心头, "那碇怎么办? 他不可能在这种爆炸中幸存下来! "

"I know." Ritsuko lowered her gaze to her feet. "The likelihood of Unit D's pilot surviving the assault is somewhere around zero point three three three percent according to the MAGI." She rose her head back to meet Misato's brown eyes. "However, our primary concern is destroying the Angel and retrieving the EVA. Under these conditions, the pilot's life is irrelevant."

"我知道。" 律子将目光垂向脚尖。"根据 MAGI 的计算，D 型机驾驶员在这次攻击中生还的概率大约是零点三三三百分比。" 她抬起头，再次与美里棕色的眼睛对视。"然而，我们的首要任务是摧毁使徒并回收 EVA。在这种条件下，驾驶员的生命无关紧要。"

The last sentence broke Misato's composure, causing her to instinctively pull her hand back and swing it across Ritsuko's face, and hard. Akagi rose her eyes back up to Misato, a tinge of anger in them. "It is your responsibility if Shinji dies, Major!" The venom was practically dripping from her mouth. "However, it is my responsibility to recover Unit D, no matter what the cost!"

最后一句话打破了美里的镇定，她本能地抽回手，猛地甩向律子的脸，力道十足。赤木律子抬起眼睛再次看向美里，眼中闪过一丝怒意。"如果真嗣死了，那是你的责任，少校！" 她的话语中几乎带着毒液。"但无论付出什么代价，回收 D 型机是我的责任！"

Ritsuko felt Misato snag her collar, yanking her closer to the Major's face. "What is so God damn important about Unit D?!" This was just one of many questions that rang through Katsuragi's mind. One among those being why they were sheltering the monstrous abomination in Terminal Dogma. Ritsuko's eyes stabbed into Misato's. "You've been given all the information, Major!"

律子感觉到美里抓住她的衣领，将她拉近到少校的脸前。"D 型机到底有什么该死的重要的？！" 这只是卡兹拉吉心中众多疑问中的一个。其中还包括为什么他们要将那个怪物般的异端藏在终端教条中。律子的目光直刺美里。"少校，你已经得到了所有信息！"

Although Misato hated the blonde as much as the Angels now, she had to admit Ritsuko was still the smartest person among NERV personnel. If no one else could come up with a plan, there's really no

尽管美里对那位金发女子和使徒一样厌恶，但她不得不承认，在 NERV 人员中，律子依然是最聪明的那一个。如果连她都想不到办法，那争论确实毫无意义。



point in arguing. However, the very thought of the possibility killing two of her kids in a single operation made her want to shred Adam inside Terminal Dogma to pieces, so that no one would get hurt.

然而，一想到在一次行动中可能牺牲掉自己的两个孩子，美里就恨不得将亚当在中央教条区撕成碎片，以免任何人再受到伤害。

'Mother, are you here? I'm Shinji.' Shinji tried to reach out to Unit D; he wanted to utilize this time to make things clear to his mother, so that in future battles, she would help him when needed.

'妈妈，您在这里吗？我是真嗣。' 真嗣试图联系 D 型机；他想利用这段时间向母亲澄清一切，以便在未来的战斗中，母亲能在需要时帮助他。

*Confusion. 困惑。*

'Mother, I know you can hear me. Listen, I know you are confused about the fact that I know you are here, it's because of what happened... back in my universe.'

'母亲，我知道你能听到我。听着，我知道你对我知道你在这里感到困惑，这是因为.....发生在我那个宇宙的事。'

*Confusion. Need more. 困惑。需要更多信息。*

'To put it simply, we failed. SEELE initiated Third Impact, and I was the trigger. Lilith gave me a second chance, and I was sent back here.'

'简而言之，我们失败了。SEELE 启动了第三次冲击，而我就是那个触发器。莉莉丝给了我第二次机会，于是我被送回了这里。'

*Confusion. Fear. 困惑。恐惧。*

'...? Ah, is it about my AT-Field? I... the power came with me; I don't know how it works... but I think it's a gift from Lilith.'

'...? 啊，你是说我的 AT 力场吗？我...这力量随我而来；我不清楚它是如何运作的...但我想这是莉莉丝赐予的礼物。'

*Comprehension. 理解。*

Shinji suddenly felt his vision went white.

真嗣突然感到眼前一片空白。

Shooting open his eyes, he found himself floating in vain, everything around him was white. Looking in front of him, his mother stood, a smile

on her face. "It's been a long time, my darling."

他猛地睁开眼睛，发现自己徒劳地漂浮着，周围一片白色。向前看去，他的母亲站在那里，面带微笑。“好久不见了，亲爱的。”

"mother!" Shinji exclaimed in happiness, "I... I've missed you!"

"妈妈！" 真嗣兴奋地喊道，“我.....我好想你！”

"you know that no matter what, I'll always be by your side, my darling."

"你知道的，无论发生什么，我都会永远在你身边，亲爱的。”

Shinji was on the edge of tears, but he held back since he had important business to do. "Mother... I know what's gonna happen... and I'll need your help!"

真嗣眼眶含泪，但他忍住了，因为他有重要的事情要做。“妈妈.....我知道将要发生什么.....我需要你的帮助！”

"Sure, my darling. Hmmm... there's someone else in your mind, who is she, Shinji?"

"当然，亲爱的。嗯.....你心里还有别人，她是谁，真嗣？”

Shinji blushed, "Oh... she's Asuka, the daughter of Kyoko... we are in love with each other."

真嗣脸红了，“哦.....她是明日香，绫子的女儿.....我们彼此相爱。”

"I'm so happy for you two, my darling. I was a friend of Kyoko, the moment Asuka was born I made a joke about you two coming together. But... how did she know I'm here? And I could feel her AT- Field as well. Is she... just like you?"

"我真为你们俩高兴，亲爱的。我和绫子是朋友，明日香一出生我就开玩笑说你们会在一起。但是.....她怎么知道我在这里？我也能感觉到她的 AT 力场。她是不是.....和你一样？”

"You're right, mother. Just that she came back from a different universe."

"你说得对，妈妈。只是她从另一个宇宙回来了。”

"I see. She had to explain things to her mother once she had a chance as well. Anyways, I'm so happy to see you happy, and I'm truly sorry for what you've been through... It was never my intention to hurt you... just you know, I'll always love you, my darling."

"我明白了。她也有机会向她妈妈解释一切。无论如何，看到你开心我真的很高

兴，对于你所经历的一切，我真的很抱歉.....我从未有意伤害你.....你知道的，我永远爱你，亲爱的。"

"It's okay, mother... I forgive you... and I love you too, mother." Shinji made a content smile, "Now, let's get the hell out of here!"

"没关系，妈妈.....我原谅你.....我也爱你，妈妈。" 真嗣露出了满足的微笑，"现在，我们离开这里吧！"

"T-minus sixty seconds till mine drop." One of the pilots overhead announced as seven different aircraft squads started to soar over the sunken section of Tokyo-3. Unit 00 stood by as they watched the bombers get ready to make their run. As time passed, Misato felt more and more nervous. Just as she was about to order the N2 strike, suddenly she saw spiderweb-like cracks began to spread throughout the shadowy pool, blood-red illumination coming from the inside of them, LCL began to pour from the Dirac sea and a loud wail could be heard.

"距离地雷投放还有六十秒。" 一名飞行员在上空宣布，七支不同的飞行中队开始在东京-3 的沉陷区域上空翱翔。零号机待命，他们注视着轰炸机准备进行突袭。随着时间流逝，Misato 感到越来越紧张。就在她即将下令进行 N2 打击时，突然间她看到阴影池中开始蔓延出蛛网般的裂缝，从内部透出血红色的光芒，LCL 从狄拉克海涌出，同时传来一声响亮的哀嚎。

Up in the sky, the black and white sphere started to convulse. Its form began to shift, and a large bulge started to form on the side nearest to her. The stretching expanded farther and farther until it started reaching disgusting levels of expansion that it seemed unnatural for the floating orb to still be intact, and then it finally ripped. A giant mechanical arm punched through what could be called the skin of the sphere, causing a massive gush of blood-red LCL to spew all over the city below. Then from the puncture, a second arm emerged, widening the gaping hole even wider. Pulling the sphere apart, the two arms ripped a large gash into it and caused another gush of LCL to shoot outward. It looked exactly like Unit 01, but at the same time looked nothing like it at all. Its mouth was agape, and it made a bellowing roar as it further disfigured the Angel that had been holding it prisoner. Its slit eyes glowed a bright yellow that contrasted against the LCL that drenched its body.

天空中，那黑白相间的球体开始剧烈颤动。它的形态开始变化，靠近她的一侧逐渐隆起一个巨大的肿块。这个肿块不断扩张，直到达到令人作呕的程度，仿佛这

悬浮的球体本不该还能保持完整，最终它破裂了。一只巨大的机械臂穿透了球体表面，引发了一股血红色的 LCL 液体如洪水般喷涌至下方的城市。紧接着，从破口处又伸出第二只手臂，将裂口进一步扩大。这两只手臂撕扯着球体，撕开了一道巨大的裂口，又一股 LCL 喷射而出。它看起来像初号机，却又完全不像。它的嘴大张着，发出震耳欲聋的咆哮，进一步扭曲了那个曾囚禁它的使徒。它的裂缝眼睛闪烁着与浸透全身的 LCL 形成鲜明对比的明亮黄色光芒。

Everyone on the command deck except Ritsuko inhaled deeply in fear.

"Oh my god," Misato murmured, "Just what is an Eva?"

指挥舱内，除了赤木律子，所有人都因恐惧而深吸了一口气。“我的天啊，”美里喃喃自语，“Eva 究竟是什么？”

Misato felt a huge weight was lifted from her chest, knowing Shinji's alive and well. However, she couldn't bring herself to face him yet; she wasn't sure how Shinji would react to the news of him potentially killed Asuka. So instead of rushing to his bedside and hugging Shinji to death after she heard that he had awoken, Misato simply drove home and waited in the living room, immersed in her own thoughts. Section 2 would escort Shinji back, after all.

得知真嗣平安无事，美里感到胸口的重担终于卸下了。然而，她还没准备好面对他；她不确定真嗣听到自己可能杀死了明日香的消息会有何反应。因此，在得知真嗣醒来后，美里并没有急匆匆地赶到他的床边紧紧拥抱他，而是简单地开车回家，坐在客厅里沉浸在自己的思绪中。毕竟，第二分部会护送真嗣回来的。

"Tadaima." Came Shinji's tired voice, which made Misato flinch. The time had come, and there's no running away from it.

“我回来了。”真嗣疲惫的声音传来，让美里不禁一颤。该来的时刻到了，无法逃避。

"Shinji... I have something to tell you," Misato spoke as soon as Shinji sat down across the table, "just stay with me, okay?"

“真嗣.....我有件事要告诉你，”美里在真嗣坐到桌子对面后立刻开口，“就待在我身边，好吗？”

Shinji had no idea of what Misato was gonna say, so he decided to listen and not jump to any conclusions. "Do you know how did Asuka come back alive from the volcano?"

真嗣不知道美里要说什么，所以他决定先听而不急于下结论。“你知道明日香是怎么从火山中生还的吗？”

'Ah, more Asuka is the Angel crap again,' Shinji thought. But he was not ready to break the truth to Misato just yet. "N-no idea, Misato- san. I just accepted it."

“啊，又是明日香是使徒的胡扯，”真嗣心想。但他还没准备好向美里揭露真相。“不，不知道，美里小姐。我只是接受了这一事实。”

Misato sighed heavily before taking a deep breath, "Shinji... she came back from a Dirac sea, the same thing that sucked you in and almost killed you yesterday."

美里重重地叹了口气，然后深吸一口气，“真嗣.....她是从一个狄拉克海回来的，和你昨天被吸入并差点丧命的地方一样。”

Although Shinji already knew all this, he still felt confused about why Misato seemed so dreadful about telling him. "Uh-huh. So... apparently the Angel likes her more than me..."

尽管真嗣已经知道这一切，他仍然感到困惑，不明白为何美里似乎对告诉他这件事如此恐惧。“嗯哼。所以.....显然天使更喜欢她而不是我.....”

Misato snapped, "Shinji! Listen!" Seeing she effectively got Shinji's attention, she continued, "there's a big chance of Asuka... being the Angel." She swallowed hard, waiting for Shinji's reaction.

美里厉声道：“真嗣！听着！”看到她成功吸引了真嗣的注意，她继续说，“明日香.....有很大的可能是那个天使。”她艰难地咽了咽口水，等待着真嗣的反应。

'Ah, I get it now. It almost makes sense that they think it this way,' Shinji thought, 'and She's hesitant to tell me because she was afraid of me breaking down after me knowing I might have killed Asuka.'

“啊，我现在明白了。他们这样想几乎是有道理的，”真嗣心想，“而她犹豫不决地告诉我，是因为她担心我知道自己可能杀了明日香后会崩溃。”

But I still have to act innocent.' "wha... what do you mean, Misato- san? Asuka... was the Angel... that I killed today?" Shinji deliberately added trembling in his voice.

但我还得装作无辜。'什...什么意思，美里小姐？明日香...是今天我杀死的那个使徒吗？'真嗣故意在声音中加入了颤抖。

"I'm afraid so, Shinji..." Misato took a grab of Shinji's hand, trying her best to comfort him, "no, don't even think it's your fault! If she was really the Angel, we wouldn't have any choice! It was her or the rest of humanity!"

恐怕是的，真嗣..." 美里握住真嗣的手，尽力安慰他，"不，千万别认为是你的错！如果她真的是使徒，我们别无选择！是她还是全人类！

"I... I understand, Misato-san," Shinji sighed. Of course he understood, since he knew the Angel was not Asuka, and Asuka was alive and well. However, he didn't even dare to think what he would react if he didn't know these in advance. "I'd really like to have some rest, Misato-san..."

我...我明白，美里小姐，" 真嗣叹了口气。他当然明白，因为他知道那个使徒不是明日香，明日香还活着。然而，他甚至不敢想象如果事先不知道这些，他会作何反应。"我真的很想休息一下，美里小姐..."

Misato sighed in relief. She didn't expect Shinji to take in the news so well; it was almost like he knew it was fake, just like last time he was told Asuka was dead. She couldn't help but grow suspicious; Shinji's reactions this time and last time were so much different from

美里松了一口气。她没想到真嗣会如此平静地接受这个消息；这几乎就像他知道这是假的，就像上次告诉他明日香已经死了那样。她不禁起了疑心；真嗣这次和上次的反应与

the first time, and she didn't have a single clue. 'Maybe this kids' heart was so broken that he stopped feeling any pain,' she thought to herself.

第一次截然不同，而她却毫无头绪。'也许这孩子的心已经碎到不再感到任何痛苦了，'她暗自思忖。

AN: yes. Another chapter done. I have something planned for the

AN: 是的。又完成了一章。我为接下来的情节

fight with Bardiel. Till next time! (probably half a week.)

与巴迪尔一战。下次见！（大概半周后。）

---

## Chapter 11: The Fourth and Fifth Children

## Chapter 12: A Woman's Battle

## Chapter 13: Beyond the Heart

## Chapter 14: Failure

**Chapter 15: The Final Messenger**

**Chapter 16: This is not the End**

**Chapter 17: After**

**Epilogue**